# HYMEN'S PRÆLUDIA:

OR,

# *LOVES MASTER-PIECE.*

Being the fifth part of that so much admir'd ROMANCE, intituled *CLEOPATRA.*

*Written Originally in the* French, *and now rendred into* English

By J. C.

---

EVAND.

*Quid magis optaret* Cleopatra *parentibus orta*
*Conspicuis, comiti quàm placuisse thori?*

---

*LONDON,*

Printed by *J. G.* for *R. Lowndes*, at the White Lion in S. *Paul's* Church-yard. 1650.

TO THE

# Highly Accomplished Noble LADY, the LADY *Dorothy Digby.*

MADAM,

*THe great and numerous obligations I have to the Noble Family of the* Chaloners *in generall, and to your Ladyſhips particular Goodneſſe, have often prompted me to thoughts of making ſome returne in the way of a gratefull acknowledgment. But alas! Madam, ſuch is the meanneſſe of my condition and abilities, that when I have ranſacked all my poore ſtore, I find my ſelf utterly in deſpaire of ever attaining to any thing, that may poſſibly merit your Ladyſhips acceptance. Nevertheleſſe emboldened by your former favours, I have preſumed to put the diſconſolate* Cleopatra (*made ſo by the loſſe of her moſt exact Interpreter* Loveday) *under your Ladyſhips protection. But I feare, Madam, your acute judgment will find ſo many flawes and blemiſhes in this ill handled piece, that you*

*will conclude that* Cleopatra *hath been worse treated by me than by the worst of her persecutors. Had this part fallen under some more happy hand, I doubt not but your Ladyship (as sometimes, I suppose, you let down your thoughts to these meaner sorts of divertisements) would have observed something remarkeable in the bold and haughty humour of* Britomarus, *the revengefull inclinations of* Artaxus, *the Jealousies of* Marcellus, *and the* Capricio's *of* Julia; *but above all in the severe vertue of the incomparable* Mariamne, *and the pure affections of the constant* Tiridates. *Yet, as it is, Madam, if your Ladyship please but to cast a favourable eye upon it, I question not but your penetrating Apprehension will create Light and Lustre out of obscurity. And if your Ladyship would but vouchsafe to take the paines to smile at my Errors, it would be more highly esteemed than the praises of the lesse judicious, by*

MADAM,

Your Ladyships most obliged, most humble, and devoted Servant,

*COLES.*

# TO THE READER.

*READER,*

HAd Mr. *Loveday* lived, this part, as it is now rendred, probably had never seen the light, at least in this unpoliſh'd garb. It was committed to my hands, and finiſhed in his life time, but whether he would have laid it by, or have ſweetned it with ſome live-touches of his own, and permitted it to have been publick, I know not, neither was I much ſolicitous. Now he is ſnatched from us, and 'tis done, take it, as men take their wives, for better for worſe. It hath one advantage above the precedent parts, that it ends with a compleat Story, and ſo will not leave thee in ſo much ambiguity as the former did. I have not been ambitious to tranſcend my Author in high expreſſions, if I have given thee his true meaning it is ſufficient for me who prefetre ſence before ſound. Let others doe as they pleaſe, but if thou diſlikeſt any thing juſtly and judiciouſly, pardon it, as they do School-boyes, becauſe tis the firſt offence I have committed in this kind, and that rather out of complacency to my Friends, than any over-weening conceit of mine own abilities.

*Farewell.*

To his reſpected Freind Mr. *John Coles*, on his purſuance of the Tranſlation of *CLEOPATRA*.

*STand cloſe my Muſe, ſhrowded in this half sheet,*
*And as the Author paſſeth by,*
*Throw down theſe Laurells at his feet,*
*They'r trophies gain'd from grave Antiquity:*

*Which now could wiſh a ſecond Being here,*
*T'admire the raptures of thy pen;*
*Souls, t'enjoy* Cleopatra's *ſphere,*
*Would be diſguis'd in mortall ſhapes agen.*

*Paleneſſe is ſtruck upon* Elizium *ſhades,*
*And Envy carv'd on ev'ry tree;*
*Grief, like a Tyrant's ſoul, invades,*
*Becauſe ſouls there are not ſo bleſt as wee:*

*And mine ſhould ſpeak no other language now,*
*But what's too great a ſize for ſenſe:*
*The world's beſt genies here ſhould plough,*
*To reap in Joy what's ſown in Influence.*

*I'le now retire into that cooler ſhade,*
*And feed upon her name in charms:*
*Thoſe joyes are airy and ſoon fade,*
*Which have one eare ope to the world's alarms.*

W. T.

To

# *To his ingenuous Friend Mr.* Coles, *on his* Cleopatra.

*Lovedaye* (who drew *Day* after him, who writ
And warm'd withall, both *Sun* and *Son* of wit;
Who *Love* with's pen so to the life did limme,
Each Lady-legent fell in love with him;
Whose rare *Seraphick* soul could not abide
Longer below, so spacious t'was, so wide;
But having dropp't a *Legacy* of love
Flew fairely hence, to ſtillifie above)
Deserves our teares ——————
But stay, our grief is Masculine, and bids keep them,
'Twould be too weak, & womanish to weep them;
Retention then must be the golden Cup
To keep them in, here's *Coles* to dry them up:
Nor could there one lesse eminent in merit
Dare *parentate* to his departed Spirit.
Though cooler wits the Funerall pile might fit,
'Tis onely *Coles* must come and kindle it.
Now methinks *Lovedayes* Genius 'gins to smile,
Seeing thy pen set fire to the pile.
For if, as some Philosophers discover,
Spirits departed hereabout doe hover,
Pregnant with longing appetite to see
Who'l cherish and befriend their memory:
*Lovedaye's* no doubt does satisfied sit,
That thou keep'st warme his ashes with thy wit.

For ſuch Grief *Cleopatra* had or'e ſpread
To ſee her firſt ingenuous Guardian dead.
Sh' had wore the eternall blacks of ſilence, and
Admitted conduct from no other hand.
Hadſt thou not ſweetly charm'd her with thy pen
T'appeare unto the world now once agen:
We'r all thy debtors for't, I (that writ ſatyres,
Clark to the Company of women-haters,
Againſt that ſex, endeavouring to degrade them
Beneath us men for which wiſe nature made them;
As knowing well they'd ſcrew their ſcorne too high
When once their faces got the victory)
Am taken with thy *Cleopatra's* Charmes,
And wiſh I had her Copy in my armes;
Fairely confeſſe her beauties doe ſo blind me,
I'm fain to leave my hereſie behind me,
That to her lovely looks, her luſtrous Locks
I am oblig'd in turning Orthodox.
Nor leſſe to thee who draw'ſt her out ſo well,
And giv'ſt her grace to work this *Miracle*.
I am all extaſie, by thy ſmooth pen
A convert made, I'l ſearch the ſex agen.
And if but her remoter like I ſee,
(And to be had) farewell ſociety.

*J. T.*

# To the ingenuous READER,

In favour of the exquisite Version of the fifth part of *Cleopatra*, done by the excellently accomplished Mr. *John Coles*.

*LEt cobling Scriblers hold their hands, for here*
*An able Artist will straitwayes appeare.*
Loveday *admir'd him, and at's going hence*
*Bequeath'd the remnant, and th'* Intelligence
*Of* Cleopatra *to him; knowing He*
*That could the* Gallick Mine *so clearly see*
*Was fittest to compleat for him that Piece,*
*Which is as famous, as either* Troy, or Greece.
*None of the Ancients ever knew the way,*
*Which the brave Author doth to us display*
*In such bewitching Language, that t'would make*
*The greatest* Cynick *his* Conceits *forsake,*
*And worship* Cleopatra *with Devotion,*
*So full of life she is, so full of Motion.*
Cupid's *with* Mars *conjoyn'd, &* Venus *fair*
*With great* Bellona *seemeth to compare.*
Beauty *'gets* Love, *which strongly doth incite*
*The High borne* Heroes *to take their delight*
*I'th' Field of Honour, where they do contend*
*For Reputation, which may them commend*

*To their adored* Ladies, *who endure*
*Conflicts ſo paſſionate, ſo pure,*
*That't may be doubted which of them excell,*
*Either* He *that* does, *or* She *that* ſuffers *well.*
*But* Vertue *ſtill doth beare away the Bell*
*Maugre the greateſt Stratagems of Hell;*
*For when grim death doth look it in the face,*
*It doth deſpiſe it with ſo great a Grace,*
*And Majeſty, that no Invention can*
*Fancy more great to be in mortall Man:*
*And then when no Eſcape at all's in view,*
Courage, *or* Fortune, *doth ſweet* Life *renew.*
*Such rare deſigns as theſe, and ſome not touch'd,*
*Are in theſe precious Leaves together couch'd.*
Ladies Heroick, *read them without Feare,*
*Since th' light* of Coles *hath made them ſhine*
*And then perhaps, he may perſwaded be (ſo clear;*
*To pleaſe your Fancies further then you ſee.*

Anthracius Romançophilus.

*To his learned Friend Mr.* John Coles, *on his Tranſlation of the fifth part of* Cleopatra.

IF *Cleopatra* faire in this our age, (page
Could read her life made plain in every
Of this thy work, to every vulgar eye,
Shee'd grow more proud and with her ſelf would vye:
To ſee her acts and Loves decipher'd ſo
As would amaze who ſhould her ſecrets know
Unleſſe *Coriolanus* now did live
A new rehearſall of the fame to give:
To ſee her ſelf in languages unknown
Character'ed, & her deeds by fame thus blown
Abroad into the world, ſo long ſince done,
As might have doubted an oblivion,
Had not thy pen for her more laſting glory
Buſied it ſelf to write her antick ſtory:
To write (I ſay) for thoguh 'twas done before,
'Tis better'd now cauſe underſtood by more.
Goe on and proſper, and what was begun
By *Loveday* to ſpeak *Engliſh*, let it run
In a continued courſe, till made by thee
A perfect mirror for poſterity
To write by: that it never may be ſaid
*Loveday* did *go* where no one elſe could *tread*.

*Tho. Manley*, Soc. med. Temp.

To

To his worthy Friend Mr. *John Coles*, upon his happy continuation of *Cleopatra*, or *Love's Maſter-piece*, being thereunto perſwaded by Mr. *Robert Loveday* before his Deceaſe.

*AS 'tis the glory of great Potentates*
*(When ſummon'd to reſign with their Eſtates*
*Th' enjoyment of their lives) to leave behind*
*Inheritors of their pow'r and gen'rous mind,*
*Who by a due ſucceſſion of their Name*
*May raiſe eternall Trophies to their Fame;*
*No leſſe Ingenious Writers ſeem to be*
*Ambitious to preſerve the Memory*
*Of their deſerving Labours, and out-vye*
*With their unwea-ied Pens, Eternity:*
*Such were the thoughts of our deceaſed Friend,*
*Who (leſt the glory of his wo-ks ſhould end*
*With his ſhort-meaſur'd dayes) beſpoke an Heir*
*T' inherit his Repute as well as Care;*
*And phœnix-like expiring (as if one,*
*Whoſe happy Genius is out-done by none,*
*were for One World enough while* Loveday *liv'd)*
*His* Aſhes *left in* Coles *to be reviv'd.*
*On then, Brave Soul, and ſtill improve the Fame*
*So happily begun in* Lovedaye's *name,*
*That, were thoſe* Heroe's *living, in whoſe Story*
*You thus ſucceed, they might give y' equall glory,*
*And after-ages in deſpight of Death*
*Say* Loveday *is not dead whilſt* Coles *hath breath.*

J.VV.

# HYMEN'S *Præludia*:
## OR,
## Love's Maſter-piece.

### Part V. Lib. I.

### ARGUMENT.

Tiridates *is very carefull of the recovery of his wounded gueſts.* Coriolanus *quits his Chamber firſt, and with* Tiridates *viſits the valiant Stranger. By the relation of their own Stories they engage him to a recitall of his life. He ſpeakes his name to be* Britomarus, *ſon of* Briton a Gaule *driven out of his countrey by* Julius Cæſar, *and thereupon engaging in* Pompey's *party. After whoſe death he takes a private retreat in* Egypt, *where he employes all poſſible care and coſt in the education of his Son. The warres in* Egypt *ſend him into* Ethiopia, *where* Britomarus *is received into* Candace's *ſervice. He falls in love with* Candace, *and upon that account falls out with* Ceſario. *They fight, and* Britomarus *is baniſhed. His Father and he retire into* Arabia, *where* Briton *is taken priſo-*

*ner by the wild Arabs.* Britomarus *endeavours his recovery, but in vain. He goes into the* Armenian *Army, where by his ſignall valour he gains great reputation and employments. The King of* Armenia *takes him to his Court. He there falls in love with the Princeſſe* Arſinoe, *and* Cinthia *a great Court-Lady with him.* Cinthia *reveales her paſſion to* Britomarus, *who excuſes himſelf as preingaged. She findes out and reveales his affection to the Princeſſe, who receives the diſcovery with ſcorn and anger.* Britomarus *returnes with the King to the warres in* Media. *He defeats an Army commanded by* Ariſton *and* Theomedes, *kinſmen to* Philadelph, *and takes them priſoners. He begs their liberty of* Artaxus, *and upon his refuſall flies out into an high exprobration of his ingratitude. The King in a blind fury cauſes their heads to be cut off, whereupon* Britomarus *deſerts his ſervice.*

THe Officious *Tiridates* did ſo farre intereſſe himſelf in the health of his two illuſtrious Gueſts, and took ſo much care of that which they both neglected, that within a few dayes there viſibly appear'd a great amendment in their wounds: Thoſe of Prince *Coriol nus* being much ſlighter than thoſe of the valiant Unknown, detained him in his bed but a ſmall time, and the cruell agitation of his ſpirit making him to hate repoſe, he had no ſooner recovered part of his ſtrength, but he deſired to walk abroad and take the aire. All the eaſe he could poſsibly

poſſibly invent to his diſpleaſures, was really neceſſary, and never poſſibly cou'd a Soul be tormented with ſo violent diſquiets as his: He had a Spirit naturally moderate, a great courage, and firme in the proofe of the hardeſt attempts, and beſides the aſſuredneſſe which he had received from nature, he had fortified himſelf therein by the Study of excellent Sciences, and of Philoſophy wherein he had knowledge even to admiration. But with all theſe advantages which ſecured him from deſpair, and partly defended him againſt his ſufferings, he had enough left to ruine an ordinary conſtancy, and few perſons prepoſſeſſed by ſuch a paſſion as his, would have been able to have ſupported the like affliction without falling under it. He called to mind twenty times a day all the adventures of his life wherein *Cleopatra* had any intereſt, and the markes which he had received of the affection of that *Princeſſe* in a thouſand occurrences; but reflecting upon her change, all the courage whereof he had given ſo many proofes could hardly ſubmit to the Empire of his reaſon; and in the ſad effect of thoſe pityleſſe thoughts which tormented him, lifting his Eyes to Heaven, with a throng of ſighs: *Ah hard change!* cryed he, *cruell change of the mind of* Cleopatra, *and of the fortune of Cortolanus!*

Sometimes from the windows of his Chamber, which was the ſame where Queen *Candace* had lodged ſome dayes before, after the example of that faire Queen he caſt his eyes upon the place, where the Princeſſe which he affected, had received her birth, and could not retire them from thence, without receiving by that veiw a ſenſible

reviving of his displeasures. O what complaints did this object draw from his mouth, and sighs from his breast, and how difficultly did he shake off all those who put him in mind of any particular concerning *Cleopatra*, without giving divers testimonies of his violent resentments! Amongst the subjects of his griefe he never accounted the losse of a puissant Kingdome, which he had recovered by his valour, and lost by his ill fortune, and amongst all his complaints he hardly made so much as slight mention of it.

*Tiridates* who was acquainted with all the accidents of his life endeavoured to give him consolation, and there being by their good offices and a mutuall knowledge of each others vertues a sincere freindship established between these two Princes, *Tiridates* unlocked his heart to *Coriolanus*, and by the confession of the love which he bare to the fair Queen of *Judea*, he obliged him oftentimes to render him the like comforts. Between these two passionate Princes there often passed excellent conversations, and as neither of them was capable but of noble and high thoughts, they could not communicate them without giving themselves reciprocally new subjects of esteeme, and without finding excellent matter to entertain each other in their solitude. They were not for all that long alone in their entertainment, and besides the opinion which *Coriolanus* had already conceived of the brave Unknown, *Tiridates* made him every day such advantageous relations of him, that *Coriolanus* being impatient to be better acquainted with a man so extraordinary, hastened the first going out of his chamber to visit him.

At

At this firſt view he found things above all that, which the report of *Tiridates* had made him a little to comprehend, and in the viſage and all the diſcourſes of the Unknown, he ſaw ſuch eminent marks of the greatneſſe of his courage, that at firſt ſight he had particular conſiderations for him: theſe apprehenſions were very reciprocall, and as the Son of *Juba* had moſt admirable parts both of mind and body, they ſuddenly cauſed the effect they were wont to produce upon the ſpirit of the Unknown, although prepoſſeſs'd with ſorrow. The firſt greetings were paſſed with all the civility which perſons buried in diſcontent could render each to other, but in the following viſits theſe admirable perſons mutually taking notice of their particular advantages, made friendſhip and confidence ſucceed their eſteem. They equally deſired to know each other; but they had not the confidence to ſignifie ſo much each to other, and if *Tiridates*, who had no leſs curioſity for the Unknown, and which by the frequent viſits he had rendred him, had more acquaintance with him, had not interpoſed, they had not for a long time diſcovered their deſires.

Upon this deſign, one day when the two Princes were by the Unknown, whoſe wounds were then in ſo good condition that he hoped in a few dayes to quit his bed; *Tiridates* beginning the diſcourſe: *It is not juſt*, ſaid he, *that perſons, Which already highly eſteeme each other upon the proofes which they have mutually received of one anothers Vertue, ſhould continue any longer together without a more perfect knowledge one of another, an I ſhould believe*, purſued he, turning himſelf towards the Unknown, *that I*

*did not set that esteeme I ought upon the excellencies which you possesse, if they had not inspired me with a desire to learn that from you, which hitherto We have not had the boldnesse to enquire. There cannot possibly be a person in the world, Who hath greater reasons than I to conceale himself, and yet to oblige you to the like confidence, and to let you know what I desire of you, I Will make no difficulty to discover unto you my name, my birth, and Whatsoever you shall desire to know touching my life: and this great Prince,* continued he, pointing to *Coriolanus,* whose intentions he was acquainted with, *though a great danger attend upon his discovery in these Countries, will not refuse to discloſe himself unto you in hope that you will afford the same satisfaction to his desire. No certainly,* replyed the Prince of Mauritania, *and if his curiosity be equall to mine, there is nothing so secret in my life, which I will not willingly acquaint him with, to lay the same obligation upon him.*

The Unknown receiving the discourse of the two Princes with very great civility: *you desire a thing* said he to them, *not Worthy of your curiosity, and Wherein I can satisfy you Without throwing my self into greater dangers then those whereunto I am reduced by my ill Fortune: I could wish to hazard and suffer something in that Which you require of me, to acknowledge your bounties by some more difficult proofe of my obedience, than that you desire; but in the condition whereinto I am precipitated by my misfortune, I have no reason to fear the acknowledgement of my name, nor any other danger, than what I am already fallen into.* The Unknown was about tohave enlarged himself, if *Coriolanus* to keep himself to the proposition they

they had made him, had not ſtay'd him: *It is juſt,* ſaid he unto him, *that we ſhould firſt acquit our ſelves of the promiſe we have made you; and afterwards we will not refuſe to underſtand from you, if you pleaſe, what may give us ſatisfaction.*

With theſe words he told him his name, and that of *Tiridates* with a ſmall abridgement of their fortunes, by which the Unknown, to whom the reputation of either was not altogether ſtrange, comprehended ſufficient to make him judge that he could ſcarcely find in the reſt of the world two Princes more worthy of his reſpect and his affection. The fame of the grand actions which the Son of *Juba* had done, as well for the ſervice of the Empire, as for the recovery of his own Kingdome, had reached the places where he had paſſed his life; and the vertue of *Tiridates*, which of it ſelf alone was able to attract the eſteem of all men, was accompanied with a birth wherein the Unknown had great intereſt: When he had patiently attended the diſcourſe of *Coriolanus*, regarding him as a great King, and as a Prince a thouſand times greater by his vertue than by his birth: *Sir*, ſaid he unto him, *the glory of your actions is ſo great, that a man muſt needs have paſſed his life in places more obſcure, than thoſe which gave me birth, to have learned the name of* Coriolanus *the ſon of* Juba, *without being partly inſtructed in what is due unto him; the ſublime appearance of your perſon, and that which I have found remarkable in your valour and generoſity, to my coſt and in my favour, had begun powerfully to perſwade me what your diſcourſe hath finiſhed: And you, O* Arſacian *Prince*, continued he, addreſſing

himſelf to *Tiridates*, *beſides what mine eyes and the fame of the great things you have done, of which the relation came to us, have given me to know of your vertue, you are born of a blood which obliges the whole earth, and particularly this infortunate which ſpeakes unto you hath great conſiderations for you.* He uttered theſe words preſſing one of the hands of *Tiridates* between his own, with a mark of extraordinary affection: and a little after ſeeing that the Princes having received the praiſes which he gave them with exceeding modeſty, expected from him the effect of thoſe hopes he had given them: *I am very ſorry*, ſaid he unto them, *that I cannot acknowledge the confidence you have teſtified unto me by ſomething great and worthy of you, and that for the knowledge you have given me of a great King and a great Prince, I can render you onely that of a private man, of a man hardly borne of noble blood, and of a man whoſe name had never been known, if fortune, as great an enemy of his as ſhe is, had not given him occaſion to do things remarkable enough, and which poſſibly have given him ſome repute: And ſo it is that you may ſooneer learn what I am by the relation of my life, than by the diſcovery of my name; and poſſibly you may finde therein accidents worthy your attention, above what an ordinary extraction may make you expect.*

He made a ſtop at theſe words, to recall to his memory the moſt remote accidents of his life, and after that he had put himſelf into a condition to make a long diſcourſe without incommodating himſelf, and that thoſe who had undertaken the cure of him, had aſſured the Princes, that he might take

take this paines without endangering his health, he began the Hiſtory of his life in theſe terms.

## *The Hiſtory of the Unknown.*

The Heavens, Nature, and whatſoever concurres to the production of men, ſometimes regulates their birth and inclinations by an order which would make the Supreme Providence to be called in queſtion, if it did not operate by reaſons which ſurpaſſe our knowledge, and the capacity of our underſtanding. Oftentimes Princes extracted from the greateſt Kings of the earth, have come into the world with inclinations very mean, and leſſe conformable to their birth, than to that of their Slaves; and ſometimes in perſons of an ordinary birth the Gods have planted a courage elevated above their fortune, and an ambition, which would more juſtly agree with the condition of great Princes, than with low or mean fortunes. I have made an infallible experiment hereof in my ſelf, and that Heaven which hath made me behold the day, without any of thoſe advantages which are drawn from Crowns, or a long ſucceſſion of illuſtrious Anceſtors, hath made me to be born with a courage which is alwayes elevated to the higheſt pretentions, which hath never failed upon any conſideration, and which by an errour which poſſibly may be condemned, hath alwayes perſwaded me that by my ſword, which I have often drawn with ſucceſſe, I might equall my ſelf with Princes, and that I ſhould find none greater than my ſelf among

among men, except he were more valiant and more vertuous. If this immoderate presumption hath engaged me in actions which may possibly have acquired me some repute in the places where I have passed my life, it hath likewise exposed me to disasters as great as my pretensions; and I begin to acknowledge, that what I attributed to the injustice and ingratitude of men, hath proceeded from the hands of the Gods, who to humble a courage unsubduable by reason, and a just apprehension, have served themselves with ingratefull men, and enraged elements, and all things which might reduce my spirit within the bounds, which by my birth they seem to have prescribed to my ambition.

My Father was born in *Gaule*, of a noble extraction, as he hath told me, and more I never knew, neither did I ever see the countrey from whence I draw my originall, nor any other of my kindred, besides him that caused my production into the world. He quitted his countrey in the time of the warres of *Julius Cæsar*, by whom his native countrey was made desolate, and out of the aversion which he had against the enemy of his countrey, he a little after engaged himself in the party of *Pompey* the *Great*, where he bare Arms with honour, and applyed himself particularly to his service. *Pompey* the *Great* honoured him with his affection, and married him to a Lady of a noble Roman family, and kept him inseparably in his retinue, to the end of his dayes. This time was of no long continuance, for the infortunate *Pompey* after the overthrow at *Pharsalia* found his death where he sought

ſought for refuge, and periſhed upon the ſhore of *Peluſium* by the infidelity of *Ptolomee*. *Briton*, for that was my Father's name, not being able to comfort himſelf for the loſſe of ſo great a Maſter, nor to follow the fortune of his wife *Cornelia*, who from aboard her own veſſel ſaw with her own eyes the deplorable death of ſo illuſtrious an husband, ſetled himſelf in a corner of *Egypt* with his wife, of whom a few dayes after I was born, and a little after death took her away, as my Father afterwards related to me. *Briton* having but one ſon left of his whole family, ſought all his conſolations in him alone; and ſeeing himſelf by the liberality of *Pompey* the *Great*, and by the gift of great ſtore of Jewels of great value, which he had received of him, to be in a condition to paſs his dayes without being expoſed to any neceſſity, he employed part of thoſe goods, which might have been converted to other uſes, to the education of a Son in whom he had eſtabliſhed all his hopes.

Nothing was ſpared for my bringing up, no more than if I had been born of ſome great Prince, & my Father very often perceiving that they with whom he was acquainted blamed the exceſſive expence he was at for me, little conformable to the condition wherein he then was, told them that he made all his goods to conſiſt in me alone, and that he could not employ them better than to put me into a capacity one day to repaire the ruines of my Fortune by my Vertue. But I owed much more to his cares, than to thoſe of my Maſters which he gave me, and by his examples and inſtructions he formed both my mind and body much more advantageouſly, than all the perſons

persons of whom he caused me to learn either Sciences or exercises. With truth I may say he nourished me like *Achilles*, and though I fed not upon the marrow of Lions as by the care of *Chiron* the Son of *Peleus* did, at least after the example of that famous Governour, he framed my body in my tender yeares to the most rough and violent exercises. No sooner could I go, but he led me a hunting, and after I began to have some strength, he did not accustome me any longer to pursue the timorous sort of beasts, but those which could not be approched without danger, & against which I might make some apprentiship of my valour. He made me with my bow in my hand, & my quiver at my back, to traverse the Forrests and the Mountaines on foot; and he did in such sort banish from my education all delicacy and effeminateneſſe, that persons of the age I now am, cannot possibly be more robustious, or more capable of all sort of toyle and travail than I was in my infancy.

Although I was brought up in *Egypt*, *Briton* was never willing that I should come neere the Court of *Cleopatra*, and he had such an aversion from every thing that might bring again into his minde the memory of the murtherers of his Master, that all that was reported of the magnificences of *Alexandria*, where so many young Princes were brought up with the children of *Anthony*, never gave him any desire to bring me thither. I confesse likewise that I never moved him to it, and though I was tickled with the relation which I heard made of things more conformable to my humour, than my solitude and the mediocrity of my fortune, yet I had inclinations like to those

those of my Father, and whether he inspired them into me by his discourse or his example, or whether they proceeded from my own nature, I had a repugnance against those persons whose memory and name were odious unto him upon his Master's account.

In this while he perceived in me by many markes a courage elevated above our condition, he saw me disdain those things at which my ambition, according to all likelyhood, ought to aime, to undervalue those which were my equalls in fortune, if by an extraordinary merit they were not worthy of a particular esteem, to aspire eternally to things above me, and in all my discourses, and in all my actions to expresse resentments very disproportionable to the estate wherein we were. Sometimes he used endeavours to subdue that which he saw excessive and immoderate in my courage, and foreseeing in part the evils to which it hath often exposed me, he set before my eyes the condition of our fortune, to make my spirit comply unto it, and in some sort to restrain the impetuosity of my nature. But when he saw that he had unprofitably employed his pains, and that all the docility & deference which I had for his instructions could not abase my thoughts, he repented himself of the endeavour he would have used to humble me, and regarding me with eyes wherein his affection sometimes produced tears: *Go*, said he unto me, *young man, worthy of a better destiny, follow thy haughty inclinations whithersoever they may call thee, I cannot prescribe limits to thy ambition, and by that I may possibly one day see thee above that envious fortune by which we have been ruined.* In finishing these words he

he moſt times turned away his eyes from my face, and ſeemed in ſuch ſort mollified by his paſſion, that as very a child as I was I could not ſee him in that condition without being touched by an extraordinary emotion.

In this time by the famous warre between *Octavius Ceſar*, and *Anthony*, the countries of *Egypt* were covered with Souldiers, and this place beheld it ſelf the fatall Field wherein the quarrell of the whole univerſe was to be decided. Although I was but 13 or 14 yeares of age, I did already burne with impatience to throw my ſelf into occaſions of getting glory: and though by the inclination I had to follow the reſentments of my father, both parties were almoſt equally odious to me, yet the name of *Ceſar*, to the averſion from which I had been accuſtomed, made his ſide yet more my enemy, and I had followed *Anthonies* ſooner then his, if the intentions of my Father had complyed with mine. I was not unapt for any kind of exerciſe, and I had acquired ſuch ſtrength by the laborioufneſſe of hunting, and other employments wherein my Father had continually exerciſed me, that a man of thirty yeares of age could not poſſibly have charged on horſe-back more vigorouſly then my ſelf, nor have better come off from a troubleſome piece of buſineſſe, wherein a ſtrong conſtitution was neceſſary. My Father who was conſcious of it feared leſt I ſhould give him the ſlip, and poſſibly I ſhould have done it after I had oftentimes unprofitably aſſayed to obtaine his permiſſion; but at that time, whether it were for this conſideration, or to a find a retreat, where he might peaceably paſſe his dayes, or for other reaſons to me

unknown, he quitted *Egypt*, and led me into places where I could not be tickled by neere occaſions with a deſire to take up armes, whereby he was affraid to loſe me; he would not retire himſelf into any of the kingdomes intereſſed in either of the two parties; he likewiſe avoided all thoſe which acknowledged any dependance upon the *Roman* Empire, and taking our way along the banks of *Nile*, he went to eſtabliſh our abode in *Æthiopia*.

We arrived at *Meroe* where the King's ordinary reſidence was, and it was in this Court that my Father made no difficulty to produce me, believing through the affection wherewith he abuſed himſelf, that I had qualities whereby I might advance my ſelf, and reape ſome fruit of the generous inclinations which he believed he ſaw in me. I was likewiſe ſo much favoured by Fortune, that in a ſmall time I was more favourably looked upon then I could expect from my condition, and my Father, by his acquaintance which his vertue eaſily procured him at *Meroe*, having found a meanes to cauſe me to be preſented to the King, this Prince found me ſo much to his liking, that after he had ſeen me divers times, and marked in me, as he ſaid, ſomething above my birth, by his ſpeciall favour he placed me among divers young men of mine own age born of the nobleſt bloud amongſt the *Ethiopians*, which he particularly dedicated to the ſervice of the Princeſſe *Candace* his onely daughter, and the inheretrix of his Crown.

*Tiridates*, who till then had heard and beheld the Unknown with great ſuſpicions, finding the confirmation of them in theſe laſt words: *I doubt no longer*, ſaid he, interrupting him, *but that you are*

Britomarus,

Britomarus, *and I find in your fortune, your humour, and your perſon, all things ſo conformable to the relation I have heard made of him, that I take you for him with an almoſt entire certainty.* The Unknowne, though a little ſurprized with this diſcourſe, replyed to *Tiridates* without being moved: *It is true,* ſaid he, *that my Father gave me the name of* Britomarus, *ſomething neere his own, and which divers perſons of his countrey and conſanguinity too had born; but I never thought I ſhould have found perſons here who could poſſibly have known it. It is ſufficiently known,* replyed Tiridates, *and together with this name, I know alſo the moſt remarkable adventures which befell you in* Ethiopia, *and part of the firſt actions you did in other countreys; but beſides that the relation I have received is very confuſed, the King of* Mauritania *underſtands nothing of it, and you may if you pleaſe, continue your narration without interruption, though ſome things may be come to my knowledge. I will obey you,* anſwered *Britomarus, and though the firſt actions of my life may ſcarce be worthy your attention, yet I will recount them unto you, that you may comprehend the continuall order of my fortune, which in the courſe of my whole life hath contracted an habit in my affaires from which ſhe never departed.*

I was no ſooner in the ſervice of the Princeſs *Candace,* but that by all ſorts of cares I endeavoured to merit the honour which I had received; and though according to my ambition all things of my capacity ſeemed below me, yet I found this Princeſs ſo worthy of all ſervices which could be rendred her in all ſorts of conditions, that I made my lofty humour comply without repugnance to all the employments

ployments which my companions had neer her. There was none more aſſiduous nor more induſtrious to ſeek out occaſions to pleaſe and obey her; and though my inclinations carried themſelves to arms a great deal more than to other employments, they themſelves in a ſhort time engaged me in a place, and to things which I had never ſtay'd upon, but onely in conſideration of my fortune. *Candace* was really one of the faireſt perſons of the world, and I would ſay ſhe was the prime beauty of the earth, if ſome beauty had not afterwards appeared unto my eyes which might equall it, and poſſibly in ſome reſpect ſurpaſs it.

To the perfection of the body was conjoyned that of the mind, and all the qualities which might render a Princeſs accompliſhed: I know not whether it were through the propenſion which we naturally have to love things beautifull that I ſuffered my ſelf to be taken, or through my pride, which perſwaded me that I could love nothing more low than the daughter of one of the greateſt Kings of the world. This preſumption was ridiculous in me, and though alwayes in all the other actions of my life I may poſſibly have managed it with reaſon enough, yet it was never poſſible for me to vanquiſh it.

Howſoever it came to paſs I became really amorous of the Princeſs of *Ethiopia*; and to accuſe my ſelf the more, I will ſay that all the appearances whereby I might condemn my love, were not ſtrong enough to oblige me to reſiſt it, and that I never oppoſed my reaſon againſt the birth of a paſſion, whereof I could not probably expect any good ſucceſs.

ceſs. I believed I might love *Candace* without offending her, and I thought my ſelf of as great a value as a Prince, although the condition of a Prince was elevated above mine. *What tyranny*, ſaid I, *ought to oblige me to offer violence to a galant inclination, and what conſideration can hinder me from loving* Candace, *if nothing but ſhe alone ſeem amiable unto my eyes? If I have not birth, I have a courag worthy of her, and if by my courage I cannot ſupply the default of my birth, it is better to periſh nobly rather than abaſe my thoughts. What know We for what the Gods reſerve us, and why may we not hope all things if We finde our ſelves capable to undertake all things?*

In this ſort I flattered my ſelf in my audacious thoughts, and if at any time by the reflection which I made upon the ſtate of my condition, I deſired to regulate and ſubmit them to more reaſonable terms, I repented a moment after, and bluſhed for ſhame to have offended, as it ſeemed to me, that courage by which my deſire was to equall my ſelf with the greateſt. All the Ladies attending upon the Princeſs (whom I might regard with more equality, and amongſt whom there were ſome who might paſs for very beautifull, if the brightneſs of their Miſtreſs had not defaced theirs) were not capable of poſſeſſing my thoughts for one moment; and if at any time I turned my eyes upon them, it was with ſo much indifferency, or rather with ſo much contempt, that they had all a juſt ſubject of diſcontent, and poſſibly of deriding my pride. I will ſay more, if modeſty permit me, that there were divers amongſt them who were not exempted from

ſome

ſome affection for me, and gave me teſtimonies of it great enough to fortifie the good opinion which I had naturally of my ſelf. Nevertheleſs this unreaſonable preſumption which flattered my haughty thoughts, did not carry me to manifeſt extravagancies, and if I believed that it was permitted me to love the Princeſs, and diſdain all that was inferiour to her, yet I knew well that I could not give her too viſible marks of my paſſion, without juſtly drawing upon me either her anger or contempt; and I was contented to endure the pain ſhe made me ſuffer without declaring it any other way unto her, than by my aſsiduity in her ſervice, accompanyed with a grace which poſſibly was not ſo naturall in my companions, and by diligences which underſtandings more intelligent than *Candace's* was at that time, would have eaſily diſcerned from thoſe which are uſed for another intereſt. Some difference likewiſe which ſhe favourably found between my companions and me, both for my perſon and my ſervices, cauſed her, to receive mine with more approbation than theirs, & I remarked in divers paſſages that ſhe ſet an higher eſteem upon me, than upon many perſons which by their birth held a very conſiderable rank in *Ethiopia*.

I was in this condition, and had ſtay'd a year at *Meroe*, when *Cleomedon* arrived there: I call him by that name, though his true name and birth are not unknown unto me: a more ample declaration might be fatall to him in this Countrey, where a few dayes ſince we have ſeen him, and though I be his enemy by a naturall inclination, and for the reaſons wherewith I will acquaint you, yet I ſhould be

ſorry by diſhonourable meanes to take a revenge upon him unworthy of my courage. This Prince born with all the advantages of nature, and compoſed of as great parts as any poſſibly could be, came into *Ethiopia* to drive me thence, and though it was not his intention, and that by the difference there was between our conditions he hardly caſt his eyes upon me, it came to paſſe rather by my fortune than his deſign, that he overthrew all my hopes, and made me go to ſeek elſewhere the occaſions whereunto I was called by my deſtiny.

This Prince, as I have ſaid, and as I am obliged to ſay to give teſtimony to the truth, had qualities altogether excellent and amiable, and yet I no ſooner judged that he loved *Candace*, (for by the intereſt I tooke therein, I took notice of this truth ſooner then others) but I conceived hatred againſt him in my heart, and it found a diſpoſition ſo naturall to receive it, that ever ſince, though the cauſe of our differences be ceaſed, and that naturally I am apt enough to be reconciled, and of an humour inclinable enough to pardon my moſt cruell enemies, I could never baniſh the repugnance which ſince that time eſtabliſht it ſelf againſt him in my Spirit: It was augmented by a thouſand occaſions, and *Cleomedon* though I believe without deſign, did me a thouſand injuries, which were never taken notice of either by him or other perſons, and which could not poſſibly have paſſed for injuries amongſt my companions, whoſe courage was not ſo haughty as mine. He deprived me every day of the meanes of entertaining the Princeſſe, who out of a particular

cular goodneſſe oftentimes diverted herſelf to diſcourſe with me: if I had the honour to lead her, as it was permitted us by the employment we had neere her, he came to do my office, and put me beſides a place which I muſt needs quit unto him out of reſpect, and in fine he did me an hundred diſpleaſures which I looked upon rather through my paſſion, then my reaſon, and which made me deteſt my infortunate birth, by reaſon of which I could not probably hope for ſatisfaction from a great Prince; but this fear was unjuſt in me, and *Cleomedon*, whoſe vertue and courage are more ſublime then his birth, made me a little after acknowledge, that he was exceeding worthy of the advantages he had above me, and that he might highly conſerve by his valour whatſoever he could acquire by his fortune. You will perceive the truth of what I have told you in the recitall of the engagement between us, and by the diſcourſe which I will make you of his admirable generoſity; you will be amazed that by his noble procedure all the hatred I had for him did not quit my heart, or rather you will believe with me that it muſt needs be retained there by unknown cauſes.

Hereabouts *Britomarus* ſtopped to recall into his memory ſome particulars of his diſcourſe: and when they were come to his mind, he went on upon the ſame things which a few dayes before *Etecles* had related to *Tiridates*. He told the two Princes the diſpleaſures he had received from *Cleomedon*, for the Noſegay he had taken from him to preſent to the Princeſſe *Candace*, he added alſo divers of the ſame nature, and at laſt came to

the relation of the offence which he did him at the publick ſports, of his reſentments, of his complaint to *Cleomedon*, and of the gallant combat which they had together, wherin he exalted the generoſity of *Cleomedon* in termes which ſufficiently diſcovered his own to his illuſtrious auditors, and made them rightly judge that vertuous men acknowledge and reverence vertue even in the perſon of their enemies. He told them in fine the command he had received to depart *Ethiopia*, whereby his reſentments againſt *Cleomedon* were revived, the combate he ſuffered in his ſoul, whileſt his wounds detained him in his bed, to ſeparate himſelf from *Candace*; He gave them the relation of his cure, of the leave he tooke of *Cleomedon*, of his departure from the Court of *Ethiopia*, and punctually all thoſe things which *Eteocles* had recounted, by the recitall whereof he cauſed in *Coriolanus* an attention and admiration for theſe beginnings of his life, which poſsibly adventures of greater importance would not have produced; and after he had related in this ſort that which *Tiridates* already underſtood, he purſued in theſe termes his diſcourſe concerning thoſe things which were as yet unknown unto him, or thoſe at leaſt whereof he had heard onely by a common report, and not by any particular narration.

It was not without very great violence, that I diſpoſed my Spirit to ſeparate my ſelf from *Candace*, and though the paſsion I had for her was not yet arrived to the point whither it might have come, yet nevertheleſſe it was not ſo ſlight, but that it made me reſent a great part of that which might

might be ſuffered by ſuch a ſeparation; and that which aggravated my griefe the more, was to ſee my ſelf driven away by my rivall (I ſay my rivall; for the inequality which was between us cannot hinder me from calling him ſo) and reduced by an unjuſt authority to yeild up a place to him which my heart had choſen, and a place which I had infallibly conſerved, if my power had never ſo little ſeconded my courage.

*What*, ſaid I, *ſhall I flie then for him, & ſhall I by him be ever baniſhed from the ſight of* Candace? *muſt I needs ſubmit to a cruell tyranny, becauſe my birth was unfortunate? and becauſe I am more weak in power than* Cleomedon, *muſt I needs bear to no purpoſe an heart as great as* Cleomedon's? *Shall this Sword wherewith I have began to exact ſatisfaction for my injuries, and which for its firſt eſſay hath poſſibly ſhed the moſt noble blood of the world, hang unprofitably by my ſide, and not defend me from the laſt offence that is prepared for me? I ſhall goe exiled, I ſhall go baniſhed to ſearch out retreats and ſanctuaries far from* Candace, *whileſt my inſolent enemy may poſſibly ſtay neer her, and ſhall not all my courage be able to preſerve me from this unjuſt and cruell oppreſſion? Ah my Birth! ah my Fortune! what enemies are you unto me? and how little conformable are you to my reſentments, which ſhall eternally complain of you!*

To theſe firſt diſcourſes which my love produced, ſucceeded the memory of the indignities I ſuffered, and the ſcorn of *Candace*, whoſe thoughts were conformable to thoſe of the King her Father, who, as well as he, blamed my inſolence, and viſited *Cleo-*

*medon* every day, whileſt his wounds detained him in his bed, without once informing her ſelf of the eſtate of mine. The deſpite I hence reſented was neceſſary to diſpoſe me to quit *Ethiopia*, and without that the fear of any hurt they could do me would never have been capable to make me for ever abandon the ſight of that I loved. *They deſpiſe thee*, ſaid I, *they accuſe thee of preſumption, they never ſo much as ask whether thou beeſt alive or no, and canſt thou feel any regret to ſeparate thy ſelf from theſe ingratefull perſons which diſdain thee? The King, who at firſt thought he ſaw ſomething extraordinary in thee, treats thee now as the vileſt of all men, he ſhamefully baniſhes thee his dominions, and hardly leaves thee thy life at the requeſt of thine enemy, and* Candace *to whom thou haſt given an heart and a life poſſibly as worthy of her as that of a Prince, diſeſteemes thee for default of thy birth and fortune, & ſuffers thee to be baniſhed from her ſervice & her Father's territories, without making one ſingle petition to him in thy favour. Ah* Britomarus! *rouze thy ſelf from that ſottiſhneſſe wherein thy blind paſſion hath intangled thee! Remember thy ſelf, that thou art not born for contempt, and that thou art poſſibly called to occaſions of glory, whereby thou may'ſt merit other kind of uſage from perſons as high as theſe which diſdain thee: make them know that they never rightly knew thee, and make them one day repent that they ſtay'd upon falſe appearances, and did not know to diſcern a vertue more worthy of their eſteem: Thou ſhalt find abroad elſewhere better conditions, than in this enemy-country, where thou haſt abandoned thy liberty; and if the Gods will favour thy courage, thou art born without*

*doubt*

*doubt to greater things than thoſe to which thou haſt given the beginnings of thy life: make thy ſelf equall to* Cleomedon *by this ſword which thou haſt drawn againſt him, and when thou ſhalt have attained to what thy heart makes thee hope for, return to diſpute againſt him, not* Candace *who deſpiſes thee, not the favour of* Hydaſpes *who treats thee unworthily; but the glory which he would raviſh from thee by the injuries he hath done thee.* Theſe thoughts coming again into my mind, fortified themſelves there at laſt in ſuch ſort, that all the powers of *Candace* were not able to reſiſt them, and after a great combat, if I could not entirely baniſh her out of my minde, yet by the reſentments which rendred themſelves equal to the love I had for her, I diſpoſed my ſelf to abandon her without regret, or at leaſt to vanquiſh what might remain by the memory of her ſcorn, and entirely to remove my thoughts to other employments, and other objects than thoſe which I could not call to minde without ſhame and diſpleaſure.

With this reſolution I parted from *Meroe* with my father, who would not leave me, though he had liberty to ſtay, & having layed the foundation of all his hopes in me alone, was reſolved to run my fortune through the whole earth. He had found in my engagement with *Cleomedon* ſomething of raſh and preſumptuous, and he gave me at firſt a very ſharp check for it; but in fine, as he had reſentments truly generous and noble, he could not abſolutely condemn it, and confirming himſelf by this action in the judgement he had made of me: *Our fortune,* ſaid he to me, *is too narrow for thee, and Heaven won-*

*would not be juſt, if it hath not reſerved ſomething for thee more proportionable to thy courage.* He often uſed theſe words and others of the ſame nature to me, ſighing and expreſſing by his viſage the diſpleaſure he had to ſee ſo little conformity between my thoughts and my condition; in all kind of occurrences he ſhewed me an ardent affection, and lived with me, as I thought, with more conſideration then parents uſually have for their children, through the good opinion he had conceived of me. He gave me, all the time I ſtay'd with him, inſtructions worthy of the vertue which the world took notice of in him, and repreſſed, as much as was poſſible for him, the impetuoſity of my youth, yet without debaſing my courage which he ſaw with joy inclined to great matters.

But alas! the inſtructions, and conſolations which I received from him were but of a ſhort continuance, and it was with a very ſenſible griefe that I ſaw my ſelf deprived of him by an unexpected adventure. Departing out of *Ethiopia* we viſited a part of *Arabia*, and I was detained in a little village by a ſlight indiſpoſition, when my Father attending my recovery, walking one day in the company of ſome inhabitants of the place where I was, with whom he was acquainted, was ſet upon by a troupe of *Arabians* who are almoſt all theeves and vagabonds, and carried away with ſome of thoſe which were with him without my hearing any newes of him: Underſtanding his loſſe, and being ſeized by a mortall griefe, I purſued after his raviſhers, and I may ſay that I hardly left a place in all *Arabia*, whither I bended not my ſteps with an intention

intention either to periſh or recover him who gave me birth: But all my excurſions were unprofitable, and with them I loſt all the hope I had conceived of ſeeing again a Father ſo deare, and to whom I had ſo great obligations.

I will not recount unto you the regrets which this loſſe cauſed me for divers moneths, and this relation will be to you as troubleſome as unprofitable in relation to the knowledge which you deſire of my life: He had left at the houſe where I was when he was carried away, money and Jewells of a very great price, which remained in my power after his loſſe, whereby I had meanes to defend my ſelf from neceſſity in my travails, and to put my ſelf into an handſome equipage to go and ſeeke occaſions of acquiring glory in thoſe places whither the fame of war invited me. I coaſted *Syria*, I ſaw *Meſopotamina*, and *Aſſyria*, but finding theſe countries at peace, I contented my ſelf to paſſe through them without ſtaying there, and I came at laſt into *Armenia* upon the report which was ſpread abroad concerning the preparations which the King of this Country made to carry war into *Media*. I found the truth conformable to what I had heard, and the young *Artaxus*, boyling with revenge for the death of his Father, who was ſaid to have loſt his life by the ſollicitation of the King of the *Medes*, father to him whom he went to engage, threw himſelf into his territories with a puiſſant army, putting all to fire and ſword. I put my ſelf into his troupes unknown, and though my equipage was handſome enough, and that I had employed thereupon part of what my Father had left

leſt me being neither able nor willing to convert it to any other uſe then what might ſerve to ſignalize me, I fought in perſon without any command in the firſt encounters. I quickly got acquaintance with the Officers of the Army, who found ſomething in my perſon worthy of their careſſes, and their amity, and in a ſhort time I was ſo fortunate that in the battles which were fought I having done actions which they ſaid were not ordinary amongſt them, the King upon the report which was made of them, had a deſire to ſee me. I was preſented unto him by the Officers with whom I had gotten acquaintance, who commended me above the truth; and the King, after he had let me know that he eſteemed me more then I could probably expect, a little after gave me the command of two hundred horſe. This was my firſt employment, and the Gods were pleaſed that I ſhould ſucceed with ſo much good fortune, that in leſſe then two moneths, by the favour of the King I ſaw my ſelf in the head of a thouſand horſe, in a condition to do ſomething conſiderable, and in hope of arriving quickly to higher preferments.

In the meane time I had ſo well endeavoured to baniſh the image of *Candace* out of my mind, that by the aſſiſtance of my reſentments, and my youth, which had but imperfectly received the firſt impreſſions of love, my ſpirit found it ſelf free and diſengaged ſooner then I durſt hope, or if any *Idea* remained of it, it gave me but very ſlight paines, and deſpite daily fortifying it ſelf in my heart, weakned it in ſuch ſort, that at laſt it was no longer in a condition to give any conſiderable traverſe to my ambitious

bitious thoughts: *I am no longer,* ſaid I, *I am no longer in thy fetters, proud Princeſſe, Which knew'ſt not how to diſcern betwixt vertue and fortune, and Which wouldſt have treated me with blindneſſe like to hers. I am aſhamed that I once gave thee ſo lightly this liberty which I ſhould have better defended; and though others poſſibly eſteeme it glorious to paſſe their whole life in thy ſervice, I cannot without bluſhing remember that I have given thee any moments of mine.* Theſe were my reall thoughts, and by little and little I ſo perfectly razed her out of my ſoul, that ambition and the deſire of glory remained there alone, and made me entirely apply my cares and my deſires to occaſions of acquiring honour, and of advancing my ſelf ſo by my valour, that I might ſee my ſelf no more ſubjected to the injuries whereunto I had been expoſed by my fortune.

I had in this deſign all the good ſucceſſe I could deſire, and if that we owe to modeſty did permit me to ſpeake of my ſelf as of another perſon, I would ſay that the *Armenians* poſsibly never ſaw a man ſignalize himſelf amongſt them by more advantageous ſucceſſes then thoſe which enſued upon all occaſions whereupon I was employed: with the thouſand horſe which I commanded I divers times cut in pieces far greater numbers of the enemy, and the King permitting me, through the inclination he perceived in me to go out often upon parties, I never returned back but loaden with the ſpoiles, and covered with the bloud of my enemies, and with all the markes of advantage he could deſire of me.

Once the Enemy having charged part of our Infantry in a narrow paſſage, I was ſent with my ſmall body

body, and I fought there with ſo good ſucceſſe, that more then two thouſand *Medes* remained dead upon the place, the reſt were put to flight, and all their baggage with a good number of priſoners fell into our power: Some dayes after at a paſſe upon a river which our enemies diſputed with us, I threw my ſelf firſt into the river, followed by a party of my men, and through the arrows which flew like haile having recovered the bank, I charged the enemies which defended it, and amuſed them ſo, that I gave leiſure to all our troups to paſſe after my example, to reach the banke and obtain an abſolute victory. By theſe petty actions I acquired great reputation in the Army, and much eſteeme in the mind of the young King of *Armenia*, who conſidered theſe things ſo much the more, becauſe I did them at an age wherein few perſons had begun to draw a ſword. But his affection was much augmented by the ſucceſſe of a battaile which was fought neere the City of *Luſſa*, whereof in part he gave me the glory, and certain it is that with three thouſand horſe, which he gave me the command of that day, I had the good fortune to rout the enemy on all parts where I encountred them, to ſave the lives of our principall commanders, and ſo opportunely with my unengaged body to ſuccour all thoſe which were in a condition of wanting reliefe, that they aſcribed to me, more then to any of the other Commanders, the advantage of this day, which was entirely ours.

After this time *Artaxus* looked upon me as a perſon extraordinary, he admitted me into his councill in ſo youthfull an age, as to appearance

did

did little merit theſe advantages, and he advanced me to fair preferments in his army. Hereby I did not onely conſerve but greatly augment the reputation which I had gained, and Fortune which at that time did intereſſe her ſelf in my glory, would have it ſo, that at the ſiege of a very important place which we had ſate down before, and for the ſuccour whereof the King of the *Medes* was advanced with his army, *Tigranes* to ſpare the bloud of his ſubjects, made an offer to *Artaxus* to decide this ſiege by a ſingle combat of one of his men againſt one of ours, upon condition, that if his Champion were conquered we ſhould raiſe the ſiege, and depart out of the Province, and if the victory happened upon our ſide the City beſieged ſhould be put into our hands and open us the gates at the end of the combat. The King of *Armenia*, who out of the animoſity which carried him on to this war, rejected all ſorts of propoſitions, ſeeing himſelf in a ſeaſon, wherein by reaſon of the cold and the incommodities of the winter which was very neer at hand, he ſhould be ſhortly conſtrained to retire, accepted this; and although the report was long before ſpread abroad even in our army of the valour of the *Mede* who was to fight, he made no difficulty to oppoſe one of his men againſt him, and believed he ſhould find as valiant as he in his own troupes. Diverſe brave *Armenians* preſented themſelves to their King to obtain this employment, and I caſt my ſelf at his feet among the firſt to demand it of him. I know not whether he choſe rather to hazard the life of a ſtranger, then of the principall of his own ſubjects,

or

or indeed the good opinion he had of me rendred my prayer more efficatious then other mens: but however it was I obtained this honour being preferred before all those that demanded it, and I received a permission to go put my self into a condition to fight the valiant *Mede*, in whom our enemies had established part of their hopes. I clad my self for this occasion in very fair armes, and then it was that I began to carry these Lions which my fortune hath rendred famous enough, and which have appeared since in an hundred combats wherein victory never abandoned them.

I will not detain you with the particular relation of this action, having so many of greater importance to recount unto you, that I can onely passe over this very lightly. All the conditions being agreed upon, and the day come, I appeared upon the field assigned in view of the two Kings, and both armies, and after the accustomed ceremonies, I fought with the *Mede*, and by great good fortune made him tumble dead almost with the first blows I gave him. This action was glorious and solemn enough to tickle my ambitious desires, and I received praises for it from the King and all our troops, wherein a soul like mine might find its entire recompence. The King that very day gave me the City which I had gained for him by this combat, and protested publickly, that there was no employment in his Kingdome superiour to me, to which I might not lawfully aspire.

A few dayes after by the rigour of the season the Armies were forced to leave the field, and the King of *Armenia* having put good garrisons in the places

places which he had taken retired into his own Countrey, and tooke me along with him to *Artaxata*, where he kept his ordinary reſidence. At my coming, through the advantangeous relation which was there made of me, I was treated better without doubt than I deſerved, and in ſtead of being looked upon as a poore ſtranger without name without eſtate, and without any advantage of fortune, I was conſidered as a man which by his valour was rendred worthy, in a few moneths, of commands which the beſt qualified perſons could hardly obtain in a great number of yeares. I had acceſſe at my firſt coming to all the Grandees of the Court, and the King giving me ample penſions to maintain my ſelf in an honourable condition, and according to the rank he would have me beare, I was as well received both among the Courtiers and the Ladies, as perſons of greater dignity then my ſelf. I was likewiſe well entertained and particularly careſſed by all the royall family, and through my ambitious humour the careſſes of theſe perſons made me deſpiſe all others, and did ſo powerfully fixe me that I hardly caſt my eyes upon the reſt. The Royall family was at this time compoſed of perſons admirably handſome made, the King though he appeared ſomething unpoliſhed in his aſpect, yet he had an high and lofty deportment: but the Prince *Ariobarzanes* his brother, and the two Princeſſes *Arſinoe* and *Artemiſa* his ſiſters were admirable Maſter-pieces of nature, for their bodies, minds, and inclinations. *Ariobarzanes* was ſixteen yeares of age, *Arſinoe* one year leſſe, and *Artemiſa* one leſſe then her Siſter; it would be

certainly a difficult thing to find any thing in the world more beautifull than the young Prince and the two Princesses, and all that which I had sometimes admired in the beauties of *Candace* seemed to be parallelled by those of *Arsinoe*, and to have very little advantage over those of *Artemisa*. Other persons would possibly have bestowed longer time in passing a judgment upon these two Princesses, and the difference was not so great, that one could easily adjudge the superiority to either; but whether it were by my inclination, or by the truth that I remained convinced, I did not doubt to give the preference to *Arsinoe*, and to judge her in all things more amiable then the Princesse her Sister. *Arsinoe* was so composed, that the eyes of Envy it self could find nothing to carpe at in the regularity of the lineaments of her visage, nor in all the structure of her whole person: her eyes black but full of the quickest fire wherewith hearts are enflamed, had in their motion and conduct something so sweet and so imperious both together, that they cast but few regards without effect; and it was hard to defend ones self against their powers, if one were not fortified by some extraordinary assistance. Their blackness, with that of her hair being of the same colour, was made remarkable by a complexion to which it gave a lustre, which nevertheless had no need of its assistance to dazle the eyes of the beholders, and to carry away the preeminence from all the purest whites that nature ever produced; her mouth, her neck, her proportion, and all her parts were complete even to the height of perfection, but the beauties of her mind were yet much more per-

perfect than thoſe of her body, and if chaſtity and modeſty were depainted in her face, they were likewiſe ſo deeply engraved in her heart, and with them vertue was eſtabliſhed in her ſoul with ſo fair an Empire, that (according to the judgement I could make of it at that time by apparences, and not by occaſions) all the moſt powerfull conſiderations would have been too feeble to ſway her ſpirit from the leaſt rule of her duty. All her diſcourſes were accompanied by a reaſoning infinitely above her age, and although her courage was ſublime above her ſex, yet it was elevated without pride, and full of a generous goodneſs. In fine, ſhe was amiable in all parts, and you will eaſily perceive by the following part of my diſcourſe, that I praiſe her now without paſſion, and without any other intereſt than what I have in the truth. I had at this time through deſpight, my youth, abſence, and warlike employments, to which I entirely gave my ſelf, baniſhed *Candace* from my heart, and if at any time ſhe preſented her ſelf there, ſhe found a reſiſtance in my reſentments which did not permit her to recover there the Empire which ſometimes ſhe had poſſeſſed. Impreſſions are eaſily defaced out of the heart of a perſon of the age that I was of when I parted from *Ethiopia*, and thoſe which I had received in mine were not ſo ſtrongly ſetled as to vanquiſh the deſpight which ſcorn enkindled in my heart. It was then almoſt free, when the beauties of *Arſinoe* preſented themſelves unto me with charms againſt which it was difficult to make any defence. I likewiſe did but weakly defend my ſelf from them, and whether it were by their power, or

my own weakneſs, or by my deſtiny which did not permit me to fix my thoughts upon any but the daughters of great Kings, but I ſuffered my ſelf to be taken without conſulting my reaſon, and without making any reflection upon thoſe things which might divert me. Neither this ſecond engagement, nor that which you will underſtand in the progreſſe of my diſcourſe, proceeded from the lightneſſe of my ſpirit, and naturally I have no inclination to change, if I be not carried to it by ſome more powerfull motive than my Love; I ſhould have loved *Candace* to my grave, if the love I had for her in ſo tender youth had had time to render it ſelf more powerfull in my ſoul, than the averſion I had for her ſcorne: but as I have naturally this unreaſonable preſumption as to believe that the inequality which is between me and that I love, ought not to expoſe me to diſdain and evil uſage, ſo by the knowledge I received of it my reſentments were ſtrong enough to baniſh from my ſoule a paſſion not well ſetled; I ſay a paſsion ill ſetled: for the laſt I have received into my ſpirit, hath placed it ſelf there after another ſort, and hath taken ſuch profound roote there, that neither regret, nor deſpite, nor jealouſy, nor all that the Gods and men can oppoſe to impede it's courſe will be capable to alter it for one moment.

In fine, I could not take notice of the amiable qualities of *Artſince* without loving her, and though recalling to minde the uſage I received in *Ethiopia*, I made ſome efforts againſt the birth of this love, whereof in all probability I ought to expect no better ſucceſs than of the former, yet if this reſiſtance

ſerved

ſerved a while againſt the ſight onely of the beauties of *Arſinoe*, it prevailed nothing at laſt againſt ſo many miracles of her mind, whereby the advantages of her body were ſurpaſſed. This inability of defending my ſelf was ſeconded by the flattery of my naturall ambition, and looking with pride upon the beginning of a fortune which I believed due to my ſelf alone: *What hinders me from hoping*, ſaid I, *but that by this valour whereof the firſt effects are ſo handſome, I may render my ſelf worthy of being an avowed Servant of* Arſinoe? *and what ought I not to expect from a Sword which hath already advanced me to a rank, where poſſibly it never placed a perſon of my age in ſo ſhort a time? Undertake, daring* Britomarus, *all that thy courage can inſpire thee with, it is too good to betray thee, and by it thou mayſt one day ſee thy ſelf in a condition not to be diſdained neither by* Arſinoe *nor any Princeſſe upon earth: If Royall bloud and Crowns be wanting to thee thy vertue may ſupply the defect of the one, and may poſſibly give thee the other; this fortune is not without example, and divers perſons of a birth inferiour to thine have attained by their valour to a royall dignity*: Arſinoe, *whoſe Spirit is not of the common ſtamp, will know how to diſcern in thee that which is moſt precious and worthy of her eſteeme, though perhaps concealed under diſadvantageous apparences; ſhe will conceive that if thou beeſt not a Prince, poſſibly thou meriteſt to be one, and thou appeareſt now before her in another condition, and in another kind of poſture, than thou didſt appear before* Candace, *by whom thou couldſt not be regarded but as one of her meaneſt domeſticks, & to whom thou couldſt not be conſiderable by any action which could*

*render thee superior to those of thy birth.* I animated, or rather flattered my self in this manner, and by indulging my passion, I suffered my self to be but too deeply engaged: all things contributed to it, & *Arsinoe* her self was partly culpable of it by the kindnesses she shewed me, and the marks of a particular esteem which she daily gave me. As she was perswaded that I was owner of some vertue, so she gave it as much respect in my person as she would have done in a great Prince, and this was that which deceived me, and which made me conceive hopes in her goodness, whereby I found my self abused.

Henceforward my love began to produce it's ordinary effects; I lost my repose and sleep, and I saw my self exposed to all the inquietudes which accompany this passion; yet mine were greater than those of other persons who have permission to ease themselves by complaint and discourse, and knowing my self obliged, by the eminency of that which I loved to bury my thoughts in a rigorous silence, I suffered without doubt in this cruell constraint, what I should not have suffered, if I had had the liberty to declare my mind: I saw the Princesse every day, and by the account the King made of me, and the state he made me take in the Court, I had free ingresse into places whether none but persons of quality were permitted to come; the Princesse did me the honour to speak often to me, she was pleased with my discourse, and oftentimes preferred it before that of the Grandees of *Armenia*: by her goodnesse I was more enflamed, and though I received it with a respect which tyed up my tongue more and more, yet it could not hold my eyes nor my sighs in the like

constraint

conſtraint, and they continually ſpake a language to the Princeſſe, which ſhe might eaſily have underſtood, if all apparences had not been contrary to it.

Amongſt the perſons whoſe amity I had acquired during the ſtay I made in *Armenia*, *Artamenes* a young *Armenian*, of a very ſublime condition, and allied divers wayes to the royall family, was the man to whom I was the moſt engaged, and which teſtified moſt affection to me: He had inclinations altogether vertuous, and a great ſweetneſſe of ſpirit joyned with a great and lofty courage; the rank he held in *Armenia* cauſed me at the firſt to uſe ſome ſubmiſſive reſpect towards him; but in a ſhort time he baniſhed all ceremony out of our ſociety, and eſteeming ſome quality in me which he preferred before birth and fortune, his abſolute will was that we ſhould live in an entire equality, and that we ſhould baniſh all conſtraint from our converſations: and ſeeing me without any other eſtate, than what I received from the King, and what I might hope for from my ſword, he would often have made me to participate of his, and have put me in a condition to out-brave neceſſity, if fortune ſhould prove contrary to me: but I had but too much diſeſteeme for things of ſo mean a value, and I alwayes aſſured *Artamenes* not onely that his friendſhip was conſiderable to me out of the ſingle intereſt of eſteeme which I had for his vertue; but alſo that what the vulgar call goods could never paſſe for ſuch in my ſpirit, or engage me in one ſingle thought of my ſeeking after them. We were almoſt every day together, and he having by his birth, and the eſteeme

which was due to his vertue, gained the beſt acquaintance in the Court, led me into all the beſt companies, and made me take my part in the divertiſements of the moſt eminent perſons; but he began quickly to perceive, both by the familiarity we had together, and the little power I had to diſſemble my thoughts that theſe pleaſures which he gave me were not ſufficiently capable to touch me, and that I diſdained all that was common in *Armenia*, for that which was greateſt and moſt eminent there. He ſaw me ſigh, change colour, and expreſs in all things an extraordinary emotion at the ſight of the Princeſs *Arſinoe*; and when by the firſt notice he took, he had grounded his ſuſpicions, he obſerved me more curiouſly than he had done formerly, and found in all my actions great occaſions to confirm himſelf in them. Out of diſcretion he would not a long time diſcover his thought to me, but when our friendſhip had made ſo large a progreſs as that he believed that familiarity permitted him all things: *Britemarus*, ſaid he to me, *it is not eaſie for perſons of your humour to diſguiſe themſelves long from their friends, and what care ſoever you take to conceale from me the ſecret of your ſoul, it appeares to me by ſo many marks, that I can no longer be ignorant of it.* Theſe words ſurprized me, as *Artamenes* might well judge by the ſilence I kept for ſome time before I returned him an anſwer; but a little after recollecting my ſelf: *I ſhall never be ſorry*, ſaid I to him, *that my moſt reſerved thoughts are known unto you, and that that which I ſhall keep ſecret from all the world ſhall be diſcovered unto you, ſince you have a deſire to underſtand it: This is an effect of your amity*

which

*which is very dear unto me,* replyed Artamen. *and yet it is not from your amity that I have drawn the knowledge of the thoughts which you have for the Princeſſe* Arſinoe: *Bluſh not,* Britomarus, continued he ſmiling, and looking upon me with more attention than more, *this is an elevation of ſpirit worthy of you, and as I hold you capable of none but high and noble thoughts, ſo I think it not ſtrange that you have choſen that which is moſt great and beautifull in all* Aſia *for the object of your affections.*

Theſe words did abſolutely put me in a kind of confuſion, but I put it off as readily as poſsibly I could; and as I have been all my life time ſo much an enemy of diſguiſe, that all the occaſions which might moſt powerfully carry me unto it, were never ſtrong enough to oblige me to tell a ly, ſo I believed that for a freind as *Artamenes* was I ought not to conſtraine my nature, and endeavouring to ſhew him a viſage full of the marks of confidence: *you have known my moſt particular thoughts,* ſaid I to him, *becauſe I have not taken the care to conceale them from you, and though you will not owe it to my freindſhip, yet by that you have penetrated into my heart, and by that I am not reduced, in relation to you, to a conſtraint which might poſſibly have hidden from you, as well as from others, part of my inclinations. I had not declared them to you ſo readily becauſe I judged that they might be too audacious, but ſince that through my imprudence you have been able to diſcern that which I ought to have kept undiſcovered from all the world, I ſhall make no difficulty to acknowledge to you that which my mouth cannot handſomely utter, and confeſſe unto you that the diſproportion*

*on of my birth and fortune have not been able to defend me againſt the powers of the Princeſſe* Arſinoe. *I do not find it ſtrange,* ſaid *Artamenes* to me, *but I cannot comprehend what your deſign can be; and if you are yet in a condition to take counſell of the beſt of your friends, you will conſult your reaſon before you engage any further: your vertue renders you, and without doubt will render you conſiderable amongſt all thoſe which wear a Sword with glory, but it doth not ſuffice to authorize your ambition; and the Princeſſe* Arſinoe *is born with an heart ſo high, and with ſo great advantages, that ſhe will never caſt her eyes but upon a great King: I never hoped,* replyed I to him, *that my thoughts ſhould be approved of by the Princeſſe (though I might truly ſay that when they ſhall be known ſhe will have no cauſe to condemn them) and I never had the intention to let her know them, ſo long as I had power enough to manage my reaſon; but I muſt tell you,* Artamenes, *that though a common diſcretion might repreſent to me ſomething of raſh and extravagant in my paſſion, yet I doe not finde my ſelf capable of loving any thing inferiour to* Arſinoe, *and I have ſo much diſdain, without being able to imagine the cauſe, for all that is below her, that I am not able to turn my thoughts towards it for a moment with the leaſt engagement. I know I can hope for no fruit from an affection ſo diſproportionable; but this is fruit great enough for me, that I have the honour to love ſo amiable and ſo great a Princeſſe, and I will never complain of my paſſion ſeeing that it hath not ſubjected me but onely to that perſon of the world which is moſt worthy of my ſubmiſſions. Poſſible it is, that a little vertue, which perhaps will raiſe me above the rank of*

*common*

*common perſons, may do ſomething more advantageous for me, and though I will expect nothing with too much confidence, yet I will deſpaire of nothing from a fortune whereof I will make a good part my ſelf. You are worthy,* replyed Artamenes, *you are worthy, dear* Britomarus, *of all you can deſire, and I finde in you all the marks of a reall Grandeur in ſo marvellous a luſtre, that there muſt needs be no juſtice in the conduct of our deſtinies, if Heaven do not act for you after an extraordinary faſhion: Perſevere in your high inclinations, ſeeing that it is impoſſible for you to abaſe them, and that I cannot now counſel you to it my ſelf without repugnance; but remember that you ought to hope more from the advantages you ſhall gain upon the ſpirit of the Princeſſe, than from the acknowledgement of the King her brother; and though he eſteemes your valour for the ſervice he receives from thence, and for an inclination ſufficiently warlike in himſelf, yet be pleaſed to know, that according to the judgement which is already made of his haughty nature, you ought to expect nothing from him by your ſervices which is not agreeable to his dignity.* Artamenes ſpake to me in this manner, and we had had more diſcourſe upon this ſubject, if we had not been interrupted by ſome perſons which came into the place where we were, and intermingled themſelves in our converſation.

In the mean while my paſſion augmenting made me more melancholy and ſolitary than ordinary, it made me oftentimes to avoid the aſſemblies of great companies, and the ſocieties wherein I was accuſtomed to entertain my ſelf, and for the moſt part when I had paid the viſits to which I was particularly

larly obliged, and could diſengage my ſelf from *Artamenes*, whoſe friendſhip and ſight were really very deare to me, I went alone to take my walkes in the moſt retired places, and there I entertained my ſelf whole houres together, with the faire *Idea* which I had in my heart. I was often ſurprized there by *Artaments* who took care to find me out, and though he oppoſed this change of my humour, yet he knew he had cauſe enough to pardon me for it.

One day having ſought my ſolitary walk in the King's parke, which is neere one of the gates of *Artaxata*, and ſuffering my ſelf to be carried by my agreeable imaginations into the moſt private Allies, in a quarter where diverſe Allies met, I lighted upon the two Princeſſes, who with diverſe Ladies of her ordinary train ſought their divertiſement in the wood. Although I endeavoured to avoyd other companies which might divert me from my flattering thoughts, yet that of *Arſinoe* had charmes for me which I could not fly, and I no ſooner ſaw her appeare, but inſtead of retiring as I ſhould have done for any other encounter, I advanced before her with a little emotion which might have been perceived in my countenance if it had been curiouſly obſerved. The Princeſſe looked graciouſly upon me, and receiving me with a deportment majeſtically courteous: *What* Britomarus, ſaid ſhe, *are you then become melancholy ſince you came amongſt us, and do you now ſeek ſolitude in a country wherein your vertue hath already gained ſo much acquaintance?* At a diſcourſe ſo obliging I expreſſed as much humility as I could poſſible, and endeavouring

vouring to vanquiſh a weakneſs which we naturally have for that we love: *Madam*, replyed I, *the ſatisfaction of the perſons whom I honour is as deare to me as mine own, and I do all that I can poſſible to ſpare my freinds the trouble of my bad company*: *Say rather*, anſwered the Princeſſe, *that you find in your ſelf, that which you cannot find in others, and that your thoughts entertain you more agreeably then the company of your friends can do*: *your Highneſſe*, replyed I, *hath ſpoken part of the truth, and certain it is that I can hardly find in the converſation of my freinds the entertainment which my thoughts may furniſh me withall*: *But Britomarus*, ſaid *Arſinoe, ſhall not we be too curious if we ſhould deſire to know ſomething of theſe thoughts which we judge to be very ſublime by the knowledge which we have of your courage? and may it it be permitted us to aſk you if it be Love or war which furniſhes you with the matter of them? my inclinations*, anſwered I, *leane no more to War then to Love, but in that which you call war, and that which you call Love I find war altogether, and the God which is preſident of war doth not cauſe more cruel combats amongſt men, then thoſe which the God of Love excites in our ſpirits*: *I believed*, replyed the Princeſſe, *that that which you call Love had been a more pleaſing paſſion then you repreſent it to be, but ſeeing it is ſo dangerous by the effects which it produces, it ought to be avoyded with precautions proportionable to the greatneſs of the evils which it may make one ſuffer*: *It is certain*, ſaid I, *that Love hath it's ſweets; but it hath likewiſe its bitterneſſe capable at leaſt to counterbalance its ſweetneſſe*: *and as there is no felicity comparable to that of a ſpirit ſatisfyed in its Love, ſo there is no*

*ſuch*

*such hard condition as that of a Lover to whom fortune is contrary in his passion: Diverse things in Love contribute and concurre to our felicity, the satisfaction of loving a thing amiable to our eyes and judgement, the facility of giving testimonies to it of our Love, and that which is yet more powerfull, the assent of the person beloved, and the correspondence to our affection; and it is very true that when a Lover is arrived to this degree of happinesse, there is nothing amongst all the things in the world which is not infinitely below him: but these benefits are sufficiently equalized by evils as powerfull, and we are not more happy by these good successes, then we render our selves unfortunate by the cruell inquietudes which torment us, by the paines of absence, the vexation of jealousy, and more then all by the insensibility or repugnance of the person beloved. Upon this account,* said the Princesse *Artemisa* who till now had not spoken, *they which are well advised, being in a peaceable and quiet condition of life will never cast themselves into this passion, wherein good and ill are confounded together, and wherein the evills far exceed the good. The choice of these two conditions,* replyed I, *is not ordinarily in our power, and it is neither by the counsell of our freinds, nor of reason it self that our minds are most frequently engaged; but by a violence which beauty exercises upon our Soules, and by forces which ours are not capable to resist: but if this election should depend upon our Will, I should never be of their party, who preferre this tranquillity or rather indolency of life before the benefits purchased by some afflictions, and I shall never complain of the dayes and years of my sufferings if they be only accompanied with hope which may sweeten them, and if by them I*

may

*may attaine to the leaſt degree of this ſupreme fortune. You diſcourſe of this paſſion,* anſwered *Arſinoe* ſmiling, *as if you had growne old in it, and yet you have paſſed ſo few yeares, that you have hardly had time to take notice of what you deſcribe, having performed ſo many brave actions as you have done in ſo ſmall a time. By this preference,* ſaid I, *which tranquillity may have in ſome ſpirits above a diſquieted life, I ſhould be happy if the judgement which your Highneſſe makes of my condition were true: but although in this paſſion whereinto I am fallen by my deſtiny, and by powers wholly celeſtiall, beſides the evils which I have ſpoken of, divers others more great and more formidable do yet prepare themſelves againſt me, and that by my laſt misfortune I am abandoned by the hope which might render them ſupportable, yet I ſhould be very ſorry to returne to my former condition, and to change theſe torments, which for me are glorious, with the repoſe wherein I have paſſed the firſt yeares of my life: Can it be poſſible,* added the Princeſſe, *that you ſhould loſe it in this Court, and that during the little ſtay you have made there, there ſhould be found a beauty capable to ſtay you with us? you, who by the report of thoſe who are acquainted with your inclinations, are of an humour to tranſport your ſelf into all places whither the occaſions of honour and war invite you: It is certain, Madam,* ſaid I to her, *that I have found there chaines ſtrong enough to captivate the freeſt ſoules, and that all the power which the conſiderations of glory can have over our ſpirits is not capable to defend us againſt the prevalency of a divine beauty: I hope,* anſwered *Arſinoe, that we ſhall one day know the beauty which hath done us this good office, and if we have not*

credit

*credit enough to learn it at this time from your owne mouth, time and your actions will discover it to us hereafter. That shall be,* replyed I, *as late as possibly I can, and if this too audacious flame doth not of it selfe bring to light the cause which hath kindled it, my mouth will hardly dispose itself to betray it, and to discover the secret of an heart, which hath no way to establish the remainder of its repose, but onely in silence.* We had, during the walke of the Princesses whom I had the honour to accompany till their returne, divers other discourses upon the same subject, without any farther declaring of my self, and the goodnes of the Princesse made me lose nothing of the respect and fear, which kept my tongue in restraint. From this day forward she questioned me a little upon what I had confessed, but it was alwayes with an obliging discretion, and the marvellous moderation with which she regulated all her actions hindred her from pressing me, for feare of creating me a displeasure.

In the meane while it was the pleasure of fortune that in the Court of *Armenia* there were Ladies by whom I was not hated, and amongst those which were neither of a meane rank nor beauty, there were some which gave me testimonies of their freindship, whereof possibly any other but my self would not have been insensible: but my soul being prepossessed, and I being transported by the immoderate ambition which hath alwayes elevated my thoughts above my self, I disesteemed that which other persons in a condition like to mine would without doubt have looked upon with obligation. Yet *Cinthia* a Lady really very beautifull, of an excellent

cellent ſpirit, and born of an illuſtrious family amongſt the *Armenians*, obliged me both by the proofes of her affection, and the qualities of her perſon to conſider her with more attention then others, and remarking in her parts good enough to perſwade them that might obſerve me, that ſhe was capable to make me love her, I was not ſorry that ſome ſmall ſervices which I rendred her ſerved as a covering to my true paſſion, and took away all knowledge and ſuſpicion of it from perſons who without doubt would not have approved of it. *Cinthia*, not without reaſon, being prepoſſeſſed with a good opinion enough of her ſelf, and flattered by the inclination ſhe had for me, eaſily believed that I loved her, and to keep me in this humour ſhe forgot nothing on her part which an honeſt maid might contribute thereunto. She was always neer the Princeſſes, and particularly engaged to *Arſinoe*, who eſteemed and favoured her above all the Ladies of the Court. The merit of this Lady, and the obligation I had to her gave me really particular conſiderations for her; but as I have a ſoul incapable of all kind of diſſimulation, I never inclined my ſpirit to act a paſſion to her, and to counterfeit tranſports and torments which ſhe never made me ſuffer. I ſhould have had too much repugnance for this action, and beſides the impoſſibility which I have to diſguiſe my ſelf, I ſhould have thought it contrary to good breeding to abuſe the ſpirit of a Lady worthy of other uſage, and of a real eſteem: but onely having noted by divers very evident marks that ſhe had affection for me, I was willing to teſtifie unto her above all others that I

was not ingratefull to her goodneſs, I rendred her viſits with great aſſiduity, and gave her often to underſtand by my diſcourſes the advantages which were remarkable in her perſon; and if at any time I intermingled any thing which might ſeem to proceed from any other originall than acknowledgement and eſteem, it was with ſo much reſervation, and ſo little engagement, that ſhe could find no reaſonable ground to perſwade her ſelf that I was paſsionate for her. Yet for all that ſhe was apt enough to believe it, and obſerving the difference between the manner of my converſation with her, and my carriage towards others, ſhe eaſily imagined that ſhe had produced in me part of that which was obſerved in the change of my humour.

I upheld her, as I told you, in this belief ſo long, as I was not importuned upon that account, and that it ſerved to conceal my real paſsion, and during this time there paſſed divers converſations betwixt us, which I will not repeat unto you, becauſe the diſcourſe would be too long, and amongſt the great things I have to tell you, I hold it not important to the relation of my life: but when ſhe would appropriate all my cares to her ſelf, and have me quit all things to attend and ſerve her, and that ſhe her ſelf made propoſitions to me of a neerer engagement in relation to marriage, I made conſcience of ſuffering her to continue any longer in her errour, and endeavoured to put her out of it by the ſweeteſt wayes poſsible.

One day after ſhe had made me a long diſcourſe to oblige me to deſire the conſent of her parents,

that

that I might be engaged in a tye to which I had no thought to ſubmit my ſelf: *Fair Cinthia*, ſaid I to her, *methinks you ſhould not uſe precipitation in an affaire of ſuch importance: I have been ſo ſmall a time in your ſight and ſervice, that you hardly have any knowledge of my nature: beſides, I am in a condition wherein without doubt your parents will diſapprove of my pretentions: I am born without eſtate, in a fortune diſproportionable to yours, and without any other advantages than what I may hope for from my Sword: It hath begun to do me ſucceſſefull ſervice, and before the twentieth year of my age, by that alone I finde my ſelf prompted to conceive the higheſt hopes; let us attend ſome effect thereof with patience, and give me leave to ſee my ſelf in a condition to obtain the approbation of your friends, before I put my ſelf in danger of being expoſed to their diſeſteem. You need not fear*, replyed Cinthia, *the diſeſteem of thoſe who already eſteem your perſon much more than riches, for want of which you believe they might diſdain you; and beſides that, your vertue, which is more conſiderable to me than all the advantages of fortune, may produce the ſame effect in the mindes of my parents; they ſee you in ſuch a degree of eſteem with the King, that by his favour you may aſpire to the higheſt dignities. If there be any apparent reaſon*, anſwered I, *to conceive theſe hopes, let us attend ſome part of them, to the end that I may with better grace offer to you and others a perſon more worthy to be preſented unto you.*

By theſe diſcourſes I ſtaid for a while the impatience of *Cinthia*, and defended my ſelf againſt her propoſitions, not having confidence enough to declare unto her the ſmall power I had to ſubmit my

ſelf to what ſhe deſired of me, but by the continuation of theſe purſuits, though founded upon a very great appearance, & by diminiſhing my addreſſes wherein ſhe ſaw me grow the colder for her preſſing me, ſhe began to open her eyes to part of the truth, and to perceive that all the ſervices I rendred her might proceed onely from eſteem and good-will, without my being poſſeſſed with any ſtronger paſsion for her. She daily confirmed her ſelf in this opinion with a very ſenſible grief, and at laſt all her modeſty could not hinder her from declaring to me with ſome earneſtneſs the regret ſhe had for it. She had obliged me one day by a very preſsing ſolicitation to fall into a diſcourſe with her little different from that which I related unto you, and this laſt time hearing me with impatience: *Britomartis*, ſaid ſhe to me, *pay me no more with theſe reaſons, which I cannot receive from you any longer as currant, after I have ſo much reſiſted them, and alledge nothing to defend your ſelf from the teſtimonies of my affection, but the onely want of your own: there it is onely that you can finde your excuſes, and I ſhould be ſtark blind if I did not clearly perceive that you never loved me.* Theſe words at firſt ſurprized me, but after I had digeſted them a little, I was not altogether ſorry that they gave me opportunity to free my ſelf from a very great difficulty, and having taken a reſolution whereunto my mind did not apply it ſelf without ſome trouble: *Cinthia*, ſaid I to her, *you may really believe that I love you, and ſhall love you ſo long as I live, as the qualities of your perſon and your goodneſſe hath obliged me, and when you ſhall ſee me wanting in this acknowledgement and reſent-*

*ment,*

*me, I give you leave to account me the moſt ingrate-full and unworthy of all men: This is a truth which I will ſeal unto you with my blood, if you require it of me;* but Cinthia— *make an end,* ſaid ſhe, interrupting me with impatience, *and tell me, as I expect, that I muſt be contented with a ſingle acknowledgement, and the good will onely of a man which hath other pretentions: I will not make my confeſſion to you in theſe termes,* replyed I to her, *and I ſhould not have courage enough to acknowledge the truth, if you your ſelf had not removed the difficulty; but ſeeing you will have it ſo, and that I eſteem you too really to abuſe you, I will tell you that deſtiny rather than reaſon hath diſpoſed of my ſoul, and before that ever I had ſpoken to you I was in a condition to receive no other reſentments for you than thoſe of eſteem, reſpect, and good will.*

I made *Cinthia* this diſcourſe with my eyes caſt down, and ſhe was ſo touched with it, that having beheld me ſometime with all the marks of a violent regret, and not having the power to expreſſe her ſelf by any diſcourſe, ſhe roſe from the place where ſhe ſate, and retired into her Cloſet and ſhut the door after her: I was really moved at this diſpleaſure, which I noted in her action and her viſage, and all that day and divers others I was not able abſolutely to free my ſelf from ſome ſmall remorſes; but in concluſion I was not born for *Cinthia*, and by my deſtiny I was ordained for other things than to paſs my dayes with *Cinthia.*

In the interim this Lady tranſported with deſpight reſolved to break off all kind of ſociety with me, and when I would have viſited her again, ſhe

oftentimes ſent me word that ſhe was indiſpoſed; and at laſt prayed me to render her no more viſits: though this order was not capable to afflict me much, yet I received it with ſome trouble, and I told the maid that brought it that I would conſtrain my ſelf to obey her Miſtreſs, and that all the repugnance ſhe had for me ſhould never hinder me from honouring and loving her, and applying my ſelf to her intereſts all the dayes of my life.

In the mean time ſeeing my ſelf diſcharged of a trouble very contrary to my nature, I purſued as I thought, the motions of my love with more liberty, and of two conſtraints being now obliged to one onely, I conſidered *Arſinoe* directly without diverting my thoughts at all from her: *O Gods! what did I ſuffer by this rigorous violence, which I was conſtrained to exerciſe upon my ſelf, and how often ſhould I have had my mouth open to ſay unto the Princeſſe, I dye for you, if feare had not ſtopped me, and taken away all the boldneſſe which I received from Heaven?* For ſomething ſhe found in a converſation which did not diſpleaſe her, ſhe often did me the honour to diſcourſe with me, and in theſe agreeable moments, if my tongue did not give my heart the ſuccour which it demanded, my eyes did expreſs for it thoughts which *Arſinoe* being ſo intelligent as ſhe was might eaſily have perceived, if the diſproportion between us had not diverted hers, or if ſhe could have imagined in me an ambition ſo little conformable to my fortune. The King at this time heaped his bounties upon me to render me capable of paſſing my life with ſome luſtre, and gave me

me hope of being advanced to the higheſt dignities, if the actions which I ſhould do for his ſervice ſhould be anſwerable to the beginnings. The Prince *Ariobarzanes* his brother, who was then about 17 or eighteen years of age, and in whom beſides his beauty and one of the moſt ſublime deportments of the world all admirable qualities were remarkable, teſtified a particular affection unto me, and let ſlip no occaſion of rendring me all kinds of good offices: He did me the honour to make me one in all the parts of gallantry which he performed either in the courſes on horſeback, or the combats of divertiſement, and if he found that I came off with ſome addreſs, I muſt needs confeſs that his alſo, not without reaſon, was admired by the whole world, and that in all particulars he gave marvellous hopes of his future excellency. *Artamenes* and I were ſeldome aſunder, and at this time he acknowledged that he had unjuſtly blamed in me the effects which Love could produce without conſulting with reaſon, and what reſiſtance ſoever he would have made, at laſt he yeilded himſelf to the powers of the Princeſs *Artemiſa*, and out of the confidence he had in me he preſently diſcover'd his paſsion to me, and inſtead of condemning it I found therein matter of great conſolation for my ſelf, I encouraged him to it as much as I poſsibly could, and repreſented to him divers times that a good courage ought to fix it ſelf upon ſublime thoughts, and that to deſpiſe common things, and to aſpire to the higheſt was the onely means to exempt a man from the rank of the vulgar. *Artamenes* defended himſelf a while by the knowledge which he had, that it was

onely for Kings, and not for the ſubjects of their brother that the Princeſſes of *Armenia* were deſtined: but he defended himſelf to no purpoſe, and at laſt entirely laid his liberty at *Artemiſa's* feet: We began thence forward to ſympathize, and t entertaine our ſelves reciprocally with the effects which our paſsions produced in our ſpirits without concealing any thing from each other. Becauſe of the rank which *Artamenes* held in *Armenia* there was leſſe temerity in his thoughts than in mine, and except the Sifters of his King, he might without preſumption pretend to any of the Ladies of the higheſt quality, yet this did not increaſe his boldneſſe, and he ſuffered as well as I, and he ſuffered, during the time we paſſed together, without daring to open his mouth to diſcover his Love.

Meane time the ſeaſon approched for our Army to take the field, and the King, whoſe will it was as in former yeares to return thither in perſon, after the winter was paſt haſtened all the preparations for our departure. All this time was ſlipt away, & I had never the confidence to ſpeak, and certainly I had gone away in the ſame condition, if my deſtiny which called me to other things had not preſented me with occaſions to diſcover my ſelf, which I never expected. *Cinthia* in whoſe ſoul deſpite had powerfully operated, though poſſibly ſhe had extinguiſhed all the affection ſhe had for me, yet ſhe was not ſo far intereſſed but that ſhe had a great deſire to know the ſubject of my reall inclinations: and as ſhe was privy to all the acquaintance I had, and knew all the perſons whoſe company I frequented, ſhe believed it would not be very

ry difficult to discover the truth. She began to be very industrious therein, and as it is much more hard to deceive persons interessed, then those which observe us without any particular design, and that besides I had little dispostion, or address to dissemble my thoughts, that which had been concealed from the eyes of others began quickly to appeare to hers, and if she were not certainly assured of the truth, she conceived at least great suspicions, wherein by the observation of all my actions she confirmed her self more and more: I believe she found some consolation in this discovery and the dignity of the cause made her support my usage towards her with greater patience, then she did whilest she was ignorant of it. She was almost continually with the Princesses, and seeing me there every day she had leisure enough to take notice of my regards, my sighs, and all the other signes whereby a passion might be discovered. All the Court knew the familiarity that was between us, but I discovered our rupture to none but *Artamenes*, and though I did not visit *Cinthia* at her own house, yet in the presence of the Princesses I accosted her as before: and she constrained her self before the world to carry her self towards me in appearance as she had been accustomed to do, and not to make her resentments break out, the cause whereof would have been disadvantageous unto her. This was that which retained part of the persons of the Court in the opinion, which they had conceived, that I had affection for her: The Princesses themselves and particularly *Arsinoe*, with whom *Cinthia* was more familiar then with her Si-

ster,

ſter, oftentimes queſtioned her about it; and though by this diſcourſe the deſpite of *Cinthia* was augmented, yet ſhe durſt not expreſſe it, and ſhe ſuffered it awhile with a ſeeming patience: but at laſt this moderation failed her, and whether it were by her reſentment, which poſſibly had animated her againſt the Princeſſe, as well as againſt my ſelf, or the imprudence of her age, ſhe was carried away contrary to my thought, and what ever might probably be expected from her. The Princeſſe was walking upon a balliſtred Terrace belonging to her lodging, leaning upon *Cinthia's* arme, and the reſt of her train believing ſhe would entertaine her particularly, retired to the other end, and left them free in their converſations. They had been diſcourſing ſome time together when I came, and the princeſs, who at that time was ſpeaking of me, no ſooner ſaw me, but called me to her, and did me the honour to make me the third perſon in their entertainment. *Cinthia* bluſht at my coming, and the Princeſs taking occaſion to continue the war ſhe had made her: *Ah well Cinthia*, ſaid ſhe to her, *you bluſh at it, and by your countenance diſcover that to me, which your mouth hath ſo long diſavowed: I make no further doubt but that you are the cauſe of the melancholy and all the inquietudes of* Britomartus, *and beſides what I have learned from the publick voice of the Court, I ſee markes which ſufficiently declare the truth. Cinthia* was almoſt quite out of countenance at this diſcourſe, which the Princeſs made her in my preſence, and not being able to imagine whether ſhe queſtioned her upon appearances and the common opinion, or whether

ther having knowledge of the truth, and the little eſteeme I had of her affection, ſhe would joyne with me to mock her, and make her ſerve for divertiſement in? an occaſion wherein ſhe found ſo much ſubject of diſpleaſure, ſhe was ready to dye with deſpite, and could hardly find in all the reſpect ſhe had for the Princeſs ſo much power as to contain her ſelf. I was but a little more aſſured, and the confuſion of us both confirming *Arſinoe* in her ſuſpicions: *you confeſſe enough both of you*, continued ſhe with a very good grace, *to remove all uncertainty that might remain in my mind, and I hope Cinthia, from the amity I have for you that hencefo'th you will not uſe ſo much ſubtilty and diſſimulation with me.* At this recharge *Cinthia* loſt all patience, and after ſhe had ſeverall times changed colour in a few moments: *Madam*, ſaid ſhe to her, *your Highneſſe diverts it ſelf at my coſt, and poſſibly you well know that it is not to me that* Britomarus *addreſſes his thoughts, and that he hath far higher pretentions*: At theſe words knowing that out of the deſpite which tranſported her, ſhe tranſcended the bounds of diſcretion, and was about to ſpeake things in my preſence, which could not but put me into a confuſion, I would have retired; but the Princeſs ſtaying me by the arme: *Tarry Britomarus*, ſaid ſhe to me, *and ſeeing that I intereſſe my ſelf in your affaires, ſuffer me to underſtand a little more of them: Ah well Cinthia*, continued ſhe, turning towards her, *you perſevere then in your diſſimulation towards me, and you would have me believe that* Britomarus *hath higher thoughts then* Cinthia: *Perhaps you know better than I*, replyed Cinthia, *but*

*if*

*if you do not, your urgency possibly will force me to tell you more then the respect I have for you ought to permit me: Ah Cinthia*, said the Princess to her smiling, *provided you satisfy my curiosity I pardon you for all things; but seeing it is not to your self, I will not let you rest in quiet till I know to whom the thoughts of* Britomarus *are addressed*: *Cinthia* out of the violence of her despight totally lost all respect and discretion, and looking upon the Princesse with a more assured countenance then before: *It is to your self Madam*, said she to her, *and Britomarus, since you force me to tell you so, hath presumtion enough to aspire to your self*: At these words she parted from us, and left me alone with the Princesse in an astonishment which can hardly be represented. *Arsinoe* remained in no lesse confusion, and repenting that she had drawn this displeasure upon her self by pressing *Cinthia* so far, she continued a long time without daring to look up in my face: My eyes were fixed upon the earth with an action whereby I was more convicted then by the discourse of *Cinthia*, and when the Princesse began to look upon me, she saw me in a condition that perfectly expresst to her the disorder of my Soul: this sight causing her to make a reflection in a moment upon divers of my actions, presently gave her suspicion, and joyning to *Cinthia*'s discourse and my troubled countenance the memory of a great many things which then appeared to her in another forme then they had done formerly, she believed part of that which this enraged Maid would have perswaded her to: yet as she was of an admirable prudence and reservednesse, she believed her self to be obliged

for divers reaſons to diſſemble her beliefe, and endeavouring to diſsipate her aſtoniſhment as ſpeedily as poſsibly ſhe could: *I did not believe*, ſaid ſhe to me, *that* Cinthia *had had ſo little diſcretion, and you muſt needs have done her ſome ſignall diſpleaſure, ſeeing that her reſentment hath made her commit ſuch follies:* The Princeſſe ſpake theſe words to me with an action ſo full of ſweetneſſe, that I was deceived thereby, and my Spirit, which till then ſtood in great awe of her, aſſumed from theſe appearances of goodneſſe a boldneſſe above what I naturally had. At laſt whether this confidence obliged me to it, or whether I had not force enough in this encounter to reſiſt the impetuoſity of my Love, my indiſcretion followed that of *Cinthia*, and giving an anſwer to the words of the Princeſs without daring to look upon her; *It is certain Madam*, ſaid I to her, *that Cinthia's reſentments againſt me muſt needs be great ſeeing that they carry her on to my ruine, and make her publiſh a crime for which I ſhould hardly hope for pardon from a leſſe goodneſſe than your own:* The Princeſſe at theſe words was much more troubled then before, and breaking ſilence with a great deale of precipitation: *What Britomarus*, ſaid ſhe to me, *are you then culpable of that which* Cinthia *reproched you with? I ſhould ſooner have ſuffered death*, replyed I, *than have declared it, and I ſhould yet expoſe my ſelf to all kinds of paines rather than confeſs it, if your Highneſſe, whom I cannot diſobey, did not demand the truth of me. I am not ignorant of the diſproportion which renders my thoughts criminall, and though in adorations proportion is not neceſſary, and that with thoughts like thoſe I have for you, we may*

raiſe

*raiſe our eyes even to the Gods themſelves, yet out of a more profound reſpect than what we uſually pay the Gods, I ſhould have concealed even to my grave that which out of feare to diſpleaſure you, both my heart and mouth ought eternally to keep ſecret from you, if by Cinthia's indiſcretion my crime had not been diſcovered contrary to my intention, and if by her fault I did not ſee my ſelf neceſſitated to acknowledge my own, whereby poſſibly I expoſe my ſelf to torments equall to my ambition.* I ſhould have ſaid more, and the aſtoniſhment of the Princeſſe gave me time enough to make her a long diſcourſe, if out of a little aſſurance which I recovered I had not advanced my eyes to her face, wherein I beheld all the markes of a violent diſpleaſure.

At this bold declaration, which appeared very offenſive to her from a man which was infinitely inferiour to her, reſentment took the firſt place in her mind, which preſently repreſented to her, that ſuch an inſolence as mine ought not to remaine unpuniſhed; and in this thought ſhe continued ſome time unreſolved which way to proceed to my chaſtiſement: but by the moderation of her ſpirit, ſhe repreſſed her firſt emotions, and having an admirable command of her ſelf, ſhe quickly reduced her choler to ſuch termes as ſhe was pleaſed to give it, & whether it were in relation to her ſelf that ſhe feared the publication of a thing which might redound to her ſhame and diſhonur, or out of a reall effect of her goodneſſe ſhe would not expoſe me to all the paines which in her opinion were due to me, ſhe diſpoſed her ſelf not to pardon my fault, but to puniſh me without noiſe, and to cut off all poſſibi-

lity

lity of a relapſe. Having framed this reſolution, after ſhe had kept ſilence a great while: *I am ſorry,* ſaid ſhe, *that by your preſumption you have made me loſe the diſpoſitions I had to eſteeme you out of the good opinion I had of you, and if I did as I ſhould, I ſhould reduce you to the knowledge of your ſelf by ſuch wayes as you have obliged me to; but the ſame goodneſs, which you have ſo imprudently abuſed, leaves your fault unpuniſhed, upon condition that you ſpeake no more to me as long as you live, and that you do not permit your ambition to aſpire higher then* Cinthia *or her equalls*: Ending theſe words with an action and a look which ſufficiently expreſſed her diſdain, ſhe retired her ſelf towards thoſe which were at the other end of the Terrace, and left me alone in a condition full of diſpleaſure and confuſion: In effect I was ſo moved with this accident, that all my naturall conſtancy was not capable to preſerve my ſoule from a great d ſorder: Griefe, ſhame, and regret firſt took their place there, and I know not which of theſe paſſions did moſt powerfully poſſeſſe me: I was extremely afflicted at the ill ſucceſs of my declaration, and the little hope I ſaw in the purſuit of my love, being aſhamed to ſee my pride checked, and my ambition humbled, and ſtung with the reſentment of diſdain whereunto my ſpirit could never accuſtome it ſelf neither for love, nor any other paſsion. All the enemies of my repoſe began to torment me with violence, and upon this Terrace from whence the princeſſes a little after retired themſelves, and whereupon I walked alone a long time, I found my Spirit much more agitated then it had been in all the other paſſages of my life:

All

All the night which followed this day I could not get so much as a taste of sleepe, and the change which I found in my condition presenting it self continually to my memory, left no repose at all in my soul, and tormented it with the most cruell inquietudes that it ever yet had felt. *What wilt thou do,* said I, *what wilt thou do unfortunate* Britomarus *in a designe so unluckily miscarried, and in an occasion wherein thou art repulsed, disdained, and forbidden to speake for ever? Thou hast rashly raised thine eyes to a Princesse worthy of other adorations then thine, and by too audaciously advancing thy self thy fall is become much greater and more dangerous: Arsinoe not without reason hath humbled thy immoderate pride, and from these ambitious thoughts, whereby like a new* Icarus *thou tookest too high a flight, there remaines nothing to thee but shame, disorder, and confusion: This Princesse whom thou hast offended by thy Love, and the foolish declaration of it, and whom by the last action thou hast made to lose the opinion she had conceived of thee for the former, justly reduces thee to the knowledge of thy self, and she does it with sweetnesse, when possibly thou hast obliged her to do it with rigour. Besides, what hope couldest thou conceive in this conduct of thy life, and with what assurance couldest thou believe that one of the greatest Princesses of the world, and a Princesse borne with a courage worthy of her birth and the admirable qualities of her person, could approve the passion of a man of no name, of no birth, and without any dignity which might render him superiour to the common sort of men?* I accused my self awhile in this manner, but a little after I undertooke also my own defence, and out

of

of a naturall inclination which we have to excuſe and flatter our ſelves, I ſought wayes to juſtify my preſumption, and reaſons to combat with the rigour of *Arſinoe*: *Thou wert not ſo low either by thy birth or fortune*, ſaid I, *that Arſinoe ought to looke upon thy love as a great crime, and if ſhe had had a ſpirit ſo remote from common thoughts as thou didſt believe, ſhe might well have underſtood that by thy Vertue thou mighteſt equalize thy ſelf with thoſe whom chance had put above thee: thy paſſion in this condition of reſpect and veneration wherein it kept it ſelf, could not be offenſive to any Princeſſe in the world, and if thou didſt not merit acknowledgement, thou didſt not likewiſe deſerve diſdain and indignation. The Gods onely puniſh thee by that which is moſt unſupportable to thy courage for the fault thou haſt committed in embarking thy ſelf ſo lightly in a ſecond Love, after thou hadſt ſcaped ſuffering ſhipwrack in the former: Thou art, without doubt, called by thy deſtiny to ſome other thing then Love; and thou oughteſt not to ſpend thy beſt dayes in this paſſion, whereby thou wilt never attain neither to the reputation thou aſpireſt unto, nor to thoſe rankes which may put thee out of danger of diſdaine and bad uſage: follow then thy inclinations, which draw thee to employments more worthy of thee, and more conformable to thy courage; quit* Arſinoe, *who diſdaines thee, for glory, who opens her armes to receive thee; and by this valour, the beginnings whereof have been ſo fortunate, put thy ſelf into a condition, that thou mayeſt no longer ſtand in feare of the diſdaines either of* Arſinoe *or any other perſon in the world.* This reſolution wherein I encouraged my ſelf as much as was poſſible, was a little after over-

thrown by the memory of *Arſinoe*, and diſſipated by powers againſt which I had not as yet drawn up my laſt reſerves; but in a few moments my reſentments, and the naturall averſion I had againſt diſdain returned it again into my ſpirit, and fortified it there in ſuch ſort, that, before the day appeared, I found my ſelf greatly inclined to follow it: I diſcovered my diſgrace to *Artamenes* onely, who bemoned me and comforted me the beſt he poſſibly could, and who trembled at this example in relation to his own intereſt, though by the rank which he held in *Armenia* he might with more likelyhood declare his affections to the Princeſſe *Artemiſa*. My misfortune ſenſibly afflicted me, and kept me ſome dayes in a very bad condition; but at laſt I ſought neither dagger, nor poyſon, nor precipices, but by an effort of my courage I confirmed my ſelf in the reſolution either to render my ſelf ſuch by my ſword as that *Arſinoe*, as great a Princeſſe as ſhe was, ſhould have no more reaſon to diſdain me, or to uſe all my endeavours by time, by abſence, and by the memory of her ſcorn to deprive her of the Empire which ſhe ſhad over my Soul. I was cõfirm'd in this deſign by the after uſage that I received from this Princeſſe, who in the places where I chanced to be at her paſſing by, did not ſo much as vouchſafe to give me a look, and in thoſe places where ſhe believed I might accoſt her ſhe ſo abſolutely took away all aſſurance from me by a viſage full of coldneſſe and diſdain, that I eaſily underſtood, that in the condition wherein I then was all hope of hope for me was extinguiſhed. She would not ſo much as ſuffer me to take my leave of her when

when we parted from *Artaxata* to return to the army, and ſhe ſaid to one of her Ladies who deſired permiſſion for me: *Till Britomarus that I have concealed his inſolence for fear of making the King my brother loſe a valiant ſervant, and that he ought not hope that I will ſee him, till he hath learned to know himſelf.* All theſe uſages in a ſpirit like mine certainly produced effects capable to advance my cure, and I was already determined to ſeeke by it all manner of wayes when we returned into the field.

The King of Armenia marched at the head of the laſt troupes he had raiſed, toward that frontire of *Media*, where he had begun his progreſſe, and I followed him with one of the beſt employments in his army: The King of the *Medes* came in perſon, as he did in the precedent yeares to the defence of his Country; and in the beginning of our taking the field were with divers battles fought wherein fortune was as favourable to me as I could deſire, and wherein I rendred my ſelf ſo conſiderable to the King of *Armenia*, that to the prejudice of diverſe perſons which by their birth and ſervices might aſpire to higher dignities, his pleaſure was that I ſhould command a body of an army ſeparated from his own, and compoſed of the better part of his troupes; with this employment wherein I engaged my ſelf with great inclination and fixedneſſe, I endeavoured to ſhake off the yoke which *Arſince* had impoſed upon me, and if I could not eaſily accompliſh it, yet certain it is that I made great progreſſe in it. One onely thing made me ſerve under *Artaxius* with repugnance, and that was the rigour which he obſerved in this war, where under

pretext of revenging the death of his father he caused all the enemies which fell into his power to be put to the sword without mercy. The aversion which I naturally have against cruelty made me often take the liberty to condemne his: but though he attributed very much to my thoughts in matters of war, he would not hearken to them when I preached clemency unto him, but remained firme in his resolution to pursue with fire and sword the hatefull bloud of those who contributed to the death of King *Artabazus*.

At this time by the great advantages we gained *Media* began to totter, and *Tigranes* was really in great danger to see himself entirely ruined, if the Gods had not sent him succour: The King of *Cilicia* his ally, and the Prince *Philadelph* his sonne came with a puissant army to his assistance, and revived his almost dying hopes. By so great a supply the face of things began to be changed, and we having to deale with a power greater than our own, we proceeded with more caution then before, and thought now upon defending our selves, whereas before all our thoughts were onely bent upon assaulting the Enemy. Severall battles were fought the successe whereof was doubtfull, wherein the advantage inclined sometimes to the one and sometimes to the other party; but in the last, wherein I was for the King of *Armenia*'s service, the glory was entirely mine, which notwithstanding was counterballanced with one of the most sensible displeasures that ever I received in my life.

*Ariston* and *Theomedes* two Nephewes of the King of *Cilicia*, being departed from their Campe with

with 2000 horſe and 5 or 6000 foot, to go and ſurprize a ſmall place which we had taken the yeare before, and the King of *Armenia* having inelligence of their march, and the condition they were in, thought good that with a number of men little different from theirs, I ſhou'd go and encounter them, and fight them as I ſhould find occaſion. I departed; I marched with great diligence, and met the enemies before they were arrived at the place which they went to ſurprize. The fight began, and was maintained doubtfull a long time, but at length the victory fell to us, and it fell to us ſo entire, that almoſt all the ſouldiers of the enemy were cut in pieces, and the two chiefe commanders being preſerved alive in the battell, by the care I tooke of their ſafety, remained my priſoners. I comforted them for their diſgrace, I promiſed them all manner of good uſage, and I returned from thence with my troupe being victorious and laden with ſpoiles, to the King of *Armenia*; he made me a welcome which ſufficiently teſtified what notice he took of this action, and expreſſed an exceſſive joy for my good ſucceſſe and the taking of the two *Cilician* Princeſſes, whom he preſently put under a ſtrict guard, and employed almoſt all the reſt of this day in praſing and careſſing me. Upon the morrow I no ſooner appeared before him, but he fell again upon my praiſes, and in termes full of Elogies extolled in the preſence of the Principall commanders this laſt action, promiſing me for it exceſſive recompences. I then took my time for a requeſt which I had to make, and after that I had anſwered the praiſes he gave me with as much mo-

desty as I possibly could : *Sir*, said I to him, *this slight action whereupon your Majesty sets too high an esteeme, is too well recompensed by the goodnesse you shew in accepting of it, but if your Majesty judges me worthy to obtaine any thing as a reward of this petty service, I request of you the liberty of the two chiefe Commanders of the enemy, which I brought prisoners, and which yeilded themselves to me upon the hope I gave them of being treated conformable to their condition : Britomartus*, replyed the King to me, with an action which expressed the little intention he had to grant me what I had desired of him, *your services are worthy without doubt of a greater recompense then what you desire of me, and I shall requite you for them in such a manner that you shall have no reason to judge me ungratefull ; but I cannot grant you this you demand of me without violating an oath, which all humane considerations are not capable to make me infringe ; and I do not so much esteeme the other fruits of your victory, and all the progresse we have made in the beginning of this* Campania, *as I do the meanes I have to let the King of* Cilicia *know by the present I will send him of his two Kinsmen's heads, after what manner I meane to make war with him, and how ill advised he hath been to beare armes against a Prince which never offended him.* These cruell words of *Artaxus* made me tremble, and beholding him with some horrour : *What, Sir*, said I to him, *can you find in your heart to put to death two prisoners of War so highly descended as* Arifton, *and* Theomedes ? *and though I should not request their lives of you for all the services I have rendred you, can you take them away from Princes escaped from*

*from the heat of the battle, taken with their Swords in their hand in a juſt war, and which never did you any particular offence?* The King did not approve of this liberty of my ſpeech, and anſwered me with a more ſerious countenance then before: *I ſhall be able to do it without doubt, and in revenge of my father, I ſhall yet do things which may ſeeme to you more cruell, which nevertheleſſe paſſe for juſt in my lawfull reſentments: but do not alarme your ſelf any more at it, and be not ſo earneſt for a thing wherein you have ſo little intereſt. Have I but little intereſt in it,* Sir, replyed I? *Ah! I have intereſt in it as in the defence of my own life, as in the conſervation of my own honour, and when either of them ſhall be in the extremity of danger I ſhall not be more intereſſed: It is by my meanes that you have theſe priſoners in your power; it was to me they rendred themſelves whileſt yet they had their armes in their hands, whereby they might have found either ſafety or a glorious death, and I cannot ſee them come to be put to death upon my parole, without expoſing my ſelf with them to the greateſt cruelty that your reſentment prepares for them: you forget your ſelf,* ſaid Artaxus to me, bending his browes, *and poſſible it would be better for you to contain your ſelf within the bounds of reſpect, and not fly out in this manner for enemies, which muſt and ſhall periſh, though all the world ſhould joyne their ſollicitations with yours for their ſafety: And I will periſh with them,* replyed I ſo tranſported, that I had hardly any underſtanding left to conſider his dignity, *and I cannot part with my life with leſſe regret then in ſacrificing it to my word, and compaſſion for theſe poore men, and the*

*displeasure to see my services so ungratefully acknowledged: you have received them from my inclination and not from my duty, and it is by my own will onely that I am engaged to give you that respect you require of me, which by my birth you cannot exact of a man that was not borne your subject:* This choler of the King of *Armenia* was mightily moved at these words, and looking upon me with eyes sparkling with indignation: *Insolent,* said he to me, *it is the rank whereunto by an excesse of favour I have advanced thee, that puts thee besides the knowledge of thy self: but know that I shall find wayes to humble thee as much as I have unjustly advanced thee, and that I shall lay thee so low, if thou doest not cease from provoking me, that possibly thou shalt serve for an example to those whom immoderate presumption makes to transgresse the limits which their birth hath prescribed them:* Ending these words full of disdain and outrage to an heart like mine, he turned another way without giving me time to reply. I should have done it for all that, how Tragicall soever the reply would have been to me, if *Artamenes* had not opposed it, and with divers others of my friends which had been present at this conversation, he had not led me to my Tent, so inflamed with choler and transported, that I was hardly capable of suffering the violence they did me with any moderation. When I was in my Tent, and that I had made a reflection of some few moments upon my adventure, and the unworthy usage I received, turning my selfe to *Artamenes,* and those that were with him: *My friends,* said I to them, *behold*

*hold me subjected to more outrage and indignity then I ought to expect from my services; and besides the injurious words wherewith* Artaxus *had a mind to humble me, I see my self, by the death of these two unfortunate men which he is about to sacrifice to his cruelty, exposed to the most sensible displeasure that my soul is capable to receive: I do little esteeme the words and disdaine of* Artaxus, *upon whom I never had any design to bottome my fortune: Henceforward the favours of a King as he is shall be lesse deare and glorious to me, and I disesteeme them too much to purchase them with the least complyance, or to receive them when they shall be offered me; but in things wherein my honour is engaged I will spend my blood to the last drop to defend it, and though I should infallibly lose my life in this design, I will leave nothing unattempted to save the two* Cilicians *whom I have imprudently delivered it up to his cruelty.* All those that heard my words could not condemne my resolution, but they saw me in no capacity to execute it, and I was able to do it so little alone against *Artaxus*, that all I could devise in this design proved but ridiculous propositions: *Artamenes* endeavoured to represent so much to me, and appeared interessed in my displeasure as much as a good and generous friend could be, but he could not bend my spirit to an unworthy and base complyance with the intentions of a cruell and ingratefull King, and I could not conceale from him that I was resolved to arme a party of the souldiery whose affections I might conceive I had gained, and goe and free the

pri-

prisoners by force from the place where they were detained, or if I could not finde sufficient courage and affection in the hearts of the Souldiers for so bold an execution, I would go and make my self be killed in defence of these infortunate men, whose death in my opinion ought eternally to be objected to me as a reproch. *Artamenes* wanted no reasons to oppose against this resolution, neither was he forgetfull of them; but our dispute was as unprofitable as my design, and presently after I had quitted *Artaxus*, this cruell man, or rather monster of cruelty, whether it were that his spirit was more exasperated by the resistance I made against his will, or that he feared lest I should attempt and execute something for the safety of the prisoners, sent the executioners who beheaded them in prison without any farther delay. The memory hereof makes me tremble as well for the compassion I had of the destinies of these two men, and the horrour I have had all my life of cruell actions, as for the reproch I might receive from my own conscience, though I was innocent, for having contributed to their destruction, after I had promised them life, and usage conformable to their condition.

*Artamenes* and the rest of my friends were still in my Tent when I received this news, and I confesse they saw me break out into discourses and actions wherein there appeared no remainder of reason, which made them fear some Tragicall event from the grief and choler which transported me. In these first emotions I thought and threatned no lesse than to revenge the blood of these poor wretches

wretches upon the perſon of *Artaxus*, from whoſe cruelty the remembrance of my ſervices could not free them: and if thoſe which were preſent at theſe menaces had not been my reall friends, upon the leaſt intelligence given to *Artaxus*, I had undoubtedly found the death I deſpiſed. *Artamenes* would not abandon me, and guarded me all that day as if I had been a mad man, doing all he poſſibly could to quiet my ſpirit from theſe violences: by his diſcourſes indeed he made me abate the raſhneſſe of them, and put me into more moderate terms than before; but for all our friendſhip he did in vain oppoſe the reſolution I had taken to quit the ſervice of *Artaxus* for ever, and to go over to the enemy, if the remembrance of the miſchief I had done them would permit me to hope for a reception there. *I will ſooner ſuffer a thouſand deaths*, ſaid I, *than continue any longer in the ſervice of this Barbarian, this blood-thirſty Tiger, whom a man cannot ſerve without rendring himſelf a complice of his cruelties, this ungratefull Prince, who requites mens ſervices with diſdaine, rage, and unworthy uſage: The onely cauſe which might make me own his intereſts ought not any longer to engage me:* Arſinoe *diſdaines me as much as her brother, and if I cannot ceaſe from loving her, yet I ought to ceaſe from ſeeing, and deſiring to pleaſe her, and to ſeek a cure far from her which poſſibly I may finde in an eternall abſence, and in other employments, than in ſuffering unprofitably at her feet.*

Although in the complaints which I made againſt *Artaxus*, I mingled ſome too againſt *Arſinoe*, yet I know

knew well how to put a difference between them, and I did not confound the ingratitude and inhumanity of the Brother, with the severity of the Sister, who was really born with all the great qualities which might render a Princesse accomplished. I was not cured of my passion by the usage she had shown me, but I was desirous to be cured, & I did so confirm my self by the injuries which I received of her Brother, that I not onely desired but conceived hope to find repose in my mind by separating my self both from *Artaxus* & *Arsinoe* for ever. My destinies, whereby I was called to some thing more important then these beginnings of my life which I have related unto you, gave birth to this design, and it was by my destinies that I was disengaged from *Artaxus* and *Arsinoe*, to be conducted into places where fortune was as advantageously serviceable to me as I could desire, where I found honours and dignities above my expectation, where I found this ingratitude fatally entailed upon my life, and where I fell into a later engagement, which made me forget *Arsinoe*, and all things else, to give my selfe entirely up to my last servitude: A servitude a thousand times more deare and more glorious to me, than all the *grandeur* I could have acquired by my Sword amongst men: a servitude whereof I made but a light essay in my former affections, and whereby at last after divers uncommon crosses and events, more worthy of your attention than what I have related to you, I might have seen my selfe advanced to an happinesse more sublime than my

my pretentions, if cruell fortune had not overturned it in a moment, and by the laſt accidents of my life, had not precipitated me into a more deplorable condition than ever my perſon had been reduced unto.

---

*The end of the firſt Book.*

---

*Hymen's*

# HYMEN'S *Præludia*:
## OR,
## Love's Maſter-piece.

### PART V. LIB. II.

### ARGUMENT.

Britomarus *being diſcompoſed by the memory of his diſaſters, deſires to reſpite the reſt of his ſtory; which is granted.* Coriolanus *and* Tiridates *walking abroad light upon a Wounded Knight richly arm'd.* Tiridates *invites him to his houſe, which the Stranger accepts. The next day* Coriolanus *taking a ſolitary walk is inſenſibly engaged in a pleaſant Wood, where by a brook ſide he lyes down and falls aſleep.* Cleopatra *and* Artemiſa *accidentally come that way and ſpye him.* Cleopatra *knowes him, and with a loud exclamation of wonder awakes him. He humbly addreſſes himſelf to her. She highly upbraids his infidelity. He deſires to know his offence, and as ſhe is about to tell him at* Artemiſa's *requeſt, ſhe is interrupted by twelve Horſemen, who ſeize upon the Princeſſes.* Coriolanus *interpoſes*

*in*

*in their defence, kills five or ſix, but their number prevailes, and they carry away the Ladies.* Coriolanus *purſuing the raviſhers, meets a Knight who quarrells with him; they fight,* Coriolanus *ſtrikes off his head-piece, and knowes him for* Marcellus. *Their expoſtulations and parting.* Coriolanus *having loſt his horſe wanders all night in the wood. The wounded Sranger gives* Tiridates *his Story. He diſcovers himſelf to be* Artaxus *King of* Armenia, *who reſolving to revenge his Father's death upon the children of* Anthony *and* Cleopatra, *goes onely with* 20 *men in ſearch of them. At Sea he meets with* Cleopatra, *and as he is ready to execute his revenge, he is captivated by her beauty. He reſolves to carry her into* Armenia. *She feignes her ſelf ſick and deſires to go on ſhore. Where taking an advantage ſhe gets away. He purſues and overtakes her, but ſhe is reſcued by* Philadelph.

AT theſe words, *Britomarus* being touched with a ſad and preſſing remembrance changed colour, and his countenance appeared to the two Princes his auditors, in a condition which made them apparently feare, that he found himſelf more ill then ordinary. *Coriolanus* moved with this fear, and intereſsing himſelf very much in the health of this valiant man: *I am fearfull,* ſaid he unto him, *leſt you have incommodated your ſelf by the long diſcourſe you have made us, and the extraordinary paleneſſe which I take notice of in your viſage gives me apprehenſions for your health. The repoſe of my body,* replyed Britomarus, *hath received but lit-*

*tle*

*tle alteration by my diſcourſe; but that of my mind is not in the ſame condition, and I confeſſe that being upon the point of entring upon the recitall of my grand misfortunes, whereof theſe ſmall ones which I have related unto you, are but a kind of a preface, to proceed to the unfortunate eſtate whereunto my life is now reduced, I find my ſelf ſo much moved and troubled, that I ſhall account it no light obligation, if you will pleaſe to permit me to differ the remainder of my narration till to morrow: I ſhall prepare my ſelf againſt that time to acquaint you with things undoubtedly more worthy of your attention, then thoſe which I have recounted unto you, and I will recover my ſpirit as much as I can poſſibly from the trouble and the perplexity whereinto a ſad and deplorable remembrance hath put it.*

*Doubt not,* replyed the Sonne of *Juba* to him, *how ſtrong ſoever the deſire is in us to underſtand the reſt of your adventures, but that the care we have of your health and repoſe is yet more powerfull, and that we ſhould be very ſorry to purchaſe the ſatisfaction which we might receive from thence at ſuch a price. We will heare the confuſion of your faire beginnings, when it ſhall pleaſe you to relate them, and when you can do it without doing your ſelf any inconvenience, and in the meane while I will aſſure you that if the actions of your life, which yet we have not underſtood, are anſwerable (as I doubt it not) to thoſe wherewith you have already acquainted us, and the proofes we our ſelves have ſeen of your valour, you had a great deale of reaſon to believe, that by the advantage of birth and Crownes no man could be greater than your ſelf. It was poſſibly my errour and preſumption,* anſwered

*swered* Britomarus, *to believe so, but I believed it onely of them, in whom vertue doth not accompany dignity, not of those, which, like you Sir, are much lesse considerable for their birth than for their vertue: and for such I always have as much acknowledgement and respect, as I have disesteem for those who are beholding to their fortune for all their splendour.*

He would have spoken more to this purpose, if the two Princes to whom his health was so dear, had not thought that he had need of some repose, and desired him to take it, remitting the remainder of his relation, as he had desired, to the day following. They left his chamber but returned not to their own; and because it was a fair day, and *Coriolanus* his strength permitted him already to walk up and down, they went upon this design to the side of a wood of high timber-trees which was neer the house, where there were divers private places, and very fair paths, where they might take the divertisement of a walk. In the beginning of theirs the two Princes fell upon the discourse of *Britomarus*, and could not forbear admiring at once, that which appeared in the beginnings of his life, in his visage, and in his discourse, of the greatness of his courage.

" Certain it is, *said Tiridates*, there is nothing " but subjects of esteem and admiration in the per- " son of *Britomarus*, and all things appeared in him " so great and so sublime, that in spight of the " confession he hath made us, it is hard to take him " for a man of obscure birth: I have already under- " stood from other mouthes than his, the greatest

" part of the actions which he hath recounted unto
" us; but I know nothing of what is arrived unto
" him since his departure from *Armenia*, and I judge
" by his beginnings, and his discourse it self, that
" the actions he did afterwards are yet more re-
" markable than the former: I am of your opinion,
" *answered Coriolanus*, and from such extraordi-
" nary beginnings I expect very great things in the
" pursuance of his relation.

" But what is your judgement, *replyed Tiridates*,
" of the little constancy he had in his former loves?
" and how can we comprehend that he transported
" his affection from *Candace* to *Arsinoe*, and since
" that as far as I can conjecture by his discourse,
" from *Arsinoe* to a third, without accusing him of
" some lightness? By that which you understand
" of my life, *added Coriolanus*, you may well judge
" that inconstancy will have but a bad advocate of
" me, and I am engaged to that I love with a fideli-
" ty too exact to excuse a change: but yet I will
" tell you, that according to my opinion, *Britomarus*
" hath no inconstant spirit, and that I give an en-
" tire belief to all that he hath told us concerning
" his inclinations upon that subject. Divers things
" in this adventure serve for his justification; his
" tender years, wherein he was not capable, and
" had not time to engage himself in a strong pas-
" sion, and the resentment of disdain, which in souls
" like his might produce very strong and very excu-
" sable effects: I believe that in the service which
" I have rendred *Cleopatra*, I have testified
" a very entire perseverance, and I will likewise
" tell you that since I have been engaged in my
" love,

"love, all difficulties, dangers, ill uſage, and all humane conſiderations, have not been capable to "divert me from it: but I will confeſs unto you "(if I may confeſs it without offending the powers of that divine Princeſs) that if in the birth of "that love which I have for her, and at that time "when I was no more ſtrongly obliged than *Britomarus* might be to *Arſinoe* and *Candace*, I had "noted any diſdain in *Cleopatra* towards me, it "would have been capable to have broken off the "courſe of a growing affection, and have made me "beſtow elſewhere what that Princeſs had diſdained. *Britomarus* did ſcarcely love *Candace* at "all, and *Arſinoe* but a very little; and beſides that "he was but a child in his firſt affection, and a very "young man in his ſecond, inſtead of meeting "therein with ſome part of thoſe ſweets which do "engage us yet more powerfully if it be poſſible "than the perſon beloved merits, he found nothing in the one or the other but a repulſe inſupportable to a courage like his, which had not "enſlaved it ſelf in ſuch ſort, but that it retained "liberty to withdraw what before it had beſtowed. "I will adde to this, that deſtiny, in my conceit, "works extraordinarily in the courſe of this life; "and that to out-brave or mock at fortune, ſhe "would ſerve her ſelf of the high inclinations of "*Britomarus*, not permitting him to apply his "thoughts but to the daughters of Kings, and giving him thoughts altogether diſproportionable "to his condition.

The King of *Mauritania* ſpake in this manner, and was about to enter into a diſcourſe with *Tiri-*

*dates* upon this matter, which would have continued a long time, when by the path wherein they walked they saw coming to them a man on horseback, clad in magnificent armour, by the riches whereof one might partly judge of the quality of him that bare them. He followed his way very slowly, and when he was neer enough to the Princes, to give them leave to take notice of his condition, they saw that he kept himself in his saddle not without staggering, and that from some wounds that he had received, the blood ran down his armour in divers places.

The two Princes at this sight touched with a generous motion, which was very naturall unto them, approched this Stranger, and they believed themselves yet more obliged to succour him, when through the viser of his helmet which he had put up, they saw a visage, which, though it were pale through loss of bloud, gave many marks of an eminent person. One and the same intention made them advance towards him, and *Tiridates* having taken hold of the bridle of his horse to hinder him from passing any further: *Take it not ill*, said he to him, *that I stay you to represent unto you that you are not in a condition to go on your journey, and that you have need of repose, and the assistance we offer you, rather than of the pain to which you expose your self:* The Unknown leaning upon the bow of his saddle, and looking upon *Tiridates* with eyes which his feebleness rendred more pleasing than they were naturally: *I have no long journey to make*, said he to him, *to go to my vessell which I have left upon this coast; but I feele my self so feeble, that I shall not*

*have*

*have ſtrength to conduct my ſelf thither, and though I know you not, ne ther am known of you, in the neceſſity I have I will not refuſe the aſſiſtance you offer me: you will finde it there without doubt,* added Coriolanus, *in the ſame manner as I received it in a condition like to yours; and this generous and obliging Prince,* ſaid he, ſpeaking of *Tiridates, is never ſo well ſatisfied as when he finds occaſions of exerciſing his generoſity.*

This word *Prince* fell from *Coriolanus* contrary to his intent, and he had no ſooner ſpoken it but he bluſhed, looking upon *Tiridates,* and demanding pardon of him by that action for the imprudence he had committed: but it was much taken notice of by the Stranger, and looking upon them with more reſpect than he did before: *The Gods have put me into good hands,* ſaid he to them, *ſeeing it is from Princes that I receive theſe ſuccours, but I will likewiſe tell you that you render them to a Prince, and to a Prince which holds a very eminent rank amongſt men.*

After theſe words the two Princes cauſed him being ſtill on horſeback, to follow the way which led to the houſe, and they marched by his ſides to ſuſtain his feebleneſs, which rendred him not very ſure in his ſaddle. Arriving at the gate, *Tiridates* called his ſervants, and by their aſſiſtance the Unknown diſmounted from his horſe, and leaning upon their arms was conducted to *Tiridates* his chamber. This obliging Prince quitted it to him out of reſpect, not having any great number of rooms in this little manſion, and took another for himſelf leſs fair, and leſs commodious.

It seemed that this house was become a retreat of wounded and afflicted persons, and since a few dayes it had served illustrious persons enough to render it as famous as the Palaces of Kings. The hurts of this Stranger having been visited by those who served *Britomarus* were not found dangerous, and it was by the losse of bloud onely that he was enfeebled ; they gave them the first dressing, and a little after they left the wounded man to that repose which was necessary for him ; but before *Tiridates* parted out of the chamber, he prayed him to lend him one of his Servants to send to the place where he had left his own, and to give them notice of the place and the condition wherein he was. He sent onely for two of his men to come to him, *Tiridates* having told him in few words, that he was obliged for divers important reasons to keep his abode secret.

This Stranger seemed to be possessed with some violent passion, and he discovered it by so many markes, that it was an hard matter for those which were neere him not to take great notice of it. Whilest they were dressing of him, he beholding the Chirurgions with eyes wherein they beheld something of fierce and terrible, said to them, *your remedies have some efficacy in relation to the wounds of the body, but those of my Soule are above your science :* And after that *Tiridates* was retired, those which he had left in his chamber to serve him heard him sigh every moment, and use interrupted discourses whereby the transport of his Soul did easily discover it self : *Must it needs be, cruell woman, must it needs be that thou shouldest escape my*

*love*

*love and my vengeance, and that my love having oppoſed it ſelf againſt my vengeance, I ſhould loſe the hope both of the one and of the other by the rigour of my deſtiny? Ah pitileſſe woman!* purſued he a little after, *and more pitileſſe a thouſand times then he whoſe cruelty thou haſt ſo much deteſted! how much are thy reſentments greater than mine! and how much more rigorous doeſt thou puniſh intentions, then I would have puniſhed reall offences! This blot, wherewith thou reprocheſt me, will quickly paſſe from me upon thy ſelf, and thou art more hard and inſenſible of pity, than that monſter of inhumanity, which thou canſt not look upon but with horrour.*

But if he tormented himſelf in this ſort, and teſtified by his diſcourſe that the wounds of his body were not the moſt painfull that he felt, the amorous *Coriolanus* paſſed not his time more agreeably than he, and though by an extraordinary conſtancy he diſſembled, and ſubdued too part of his diſpleaſure, yet he ſuffered enough to foile any other courage but his own. He was then well enough cured of his hurts to get on horſeback, to take armes again, and to run the courſe which his paſſions called him to; but beſides that he was reſolved for ſome dayes to expect the return of *Strato* his faithfull freed-man whom he had ſent for newes; he had learned by a generall report, that *Auguſtus*, after he had eſcaped a violent tempeſt wherein he had loſt part of his veſſells, was landed at *Peluſium*, and was expected at *Alexandria* where he was to arrive within a few dayes. He had given notice by *Emilius* of the place where he was, and the maſter of the houſe whither *Strato* was to

come, and the ſtay of this man, whoſe voyage by all likelyhoods needed not have been ſo long, redoubled his impatiences and diſquiets: That night he was extraordinarily tormented, and the evils of his body having entirely given place to thoſe of his mind, he could hadly find ſome moments of interrupted ſleep.

On the morrow, a little while after he was ready, deſiring to find ſome comfort in the free entertainment of his thoughts, he left *Tiridates* buſied in the offic ous cares which he took for his gueſts, and went to ſeek ſolitude in the ſame place wh re *Tiridates* and he had walked the day before. It was a wood of high timber trees which extended it ſelf over the p'aine more than two hundred furlongs in circuit, and it was bordered upon by divers houſes of the inhabitants of *Alexandria* built upon the outſides of it. As it had ſometimes ſerved for the divertiſement of *Kings*, and did yet ſe:ve the *Prætors* of *Egypt* in that nature, it had divers large and faire wayes, in which a walk was no leſſe agreeable than in the allies compoſed with more artifice, and there were a great number of paths whereby one might retire into the moſt ſolitary and wild parts of the woods. It was alſo embelliſhed with divers rivulets, which riſing from divers ſprings not far off, after their pleaſant winding amongſt rhe trees went to emboſome themſelves in the Sea.

In this ſolitary place *Tiridates* had often entertained the *Idea* of *Mariamne*, and in this place the ſad *Coriolanus* entertained himſelf a long time in the remembrance of his ungratefull *Cleopatra*. He vo-

voluntarily quitted the great wayes for the private paths, and that part of the wood which was moſt ſhady and deſart, did beſt agree with the condition of his Spirit. In this ſad walke keeping his thoughts wholly fixed upon his ill fortune, he found in all ſorts of objects a renewing of his diſpleaſures, and few things preſented themſelves to his view, which did not bring back to his memory ſome new ſubjects to conſider of the change of his fortune. By the ſight of thoſe great trees under which he walked, he was put in mind of the fair allies upon the bank of *Tiber*, wherein he had had ſuch ſweet converſations with *Cleopatra*, and by this preſſing *Idea* which this conformity did preſently imprint in his mind, addreſſing himſelf to thoſe inſenſible objects: "Under a ſhade like yours, *ſaid he*, I have an hundred times taſted the ſweetneſs which you cannot "repreſent unto me without touching me ſenſibly, "and under branches which like yours defended us "from the beams of the Sun, *Cleopatra* often gave "me aſſurances of that precious affection wherein "I have eſtabliſhed my life. In thoſe places "which for me were fortunate, ſhe hath proteſted "an hundred times that nothing was more dear to "her than *Coriolanus*, and in thoſe places upon a "bark like yours, ſhe hath permitted me divers "times to engrave in her preſence the glorious "marks of my happineſs: But O Gods! *replyed he* "*preſently to himſelf*, how much leſs reſemblance "have you to thoſe fair places the dear witneſſes of "my felicity, than to the fatall wood of *Syracuſe* "where I received the cruell ſentence of my death? "Ah 'tis of that without doubt you repreſent me

"with

" with the figure, and you want but little of bring-
" ing back to my eares the ſound of thoſe pitileſs
" words whereby I ſee my ſelf ſo unjuſtly condem-
" ned.

This ſad accident of his life, or rather this ſad part of his life, whereby that which remained was expoſed to ſuch cruell pains, imprinted it ſelf at that time ſo ſtrongly in his imagination, that it rendred it as much preſent to his thoughts, as if time and the accidents which had befallen him ſince had not remov'd it from him for one ſingle moment, and all that which in ſome ſweet intervall might have refreſhed him with ſome agreeable remembrance, was diſſipated by this laſt reflection, and left him almoſt in the ſame condition wherein he had appeared the laſt time before the eyes of his pitileſſe Princeſs: " Ah my remembrances, *cryed he, after*
" *he had kept ſilence awhile*, ah remembrances of my
" fortune paſt! good reaſon is there that ye ſhould
" quit your place to the memory of my preſent mi-
" ſeries, and ye would do well never to return into
" a mind, wherein you can leave nothing but matters
" of eternall grief: that which ye have preſented
" to it is but a dream and a vapour; if ye have ſome-
" times made it ſee *Cleopatra* good, and *Cleopatra*
" affectionate, thoſe remembrances which have
" ſucceeded you, ſhew it now with more truth
" *Cleopatra* without affection, *Cleopatra* incenſed,
" or *Cleopatra* changed: all the ſweetneſs and ac-
" knowledgement ſhe had once for me is vaniſhed
" with the changing of her mind; and if I were once
" *Coriolanus* more conſiderable to *Cleopatra*, than
" all ſhe could hope for from the ſupport and alli-
" ance

"ance of *Livia*, I am now no better than a monſter "of *Africa*, moſt odious and abominable to *Cleo-*"*patra*, than her moſt cruell enemies, or the vileſt "perſons upon the earth. Return then no more, "ye enemies of that ſhadow of falſe repoſe, where-"with my ſolitude hath flattered me, and permit "your cruell companions to finiſh what they "have begun, and can performe without your "help.

At this ſad conſideration he continued mute a while, ſearching with ſlow ſteps in the moſt obſcure places that which did beſt agree with the darkneſſe of his ſpirit. From the reflection he had lately made, and did eternally make upon his misfortune, he paſſed to a ſearch of that which might be the cauſe of it, and after that he had examined his whole life even to his moſt ſecret thoughts, and finding nothing therein but innocence: "No *Cleo-*"*patra*, *ſaid he*, the Gods are my witneſſes that I "have not failed in any thing towards you, or if "there be any thing of criminall in my life, I am "and have been alwayes ignorant of it: the Gods "alone are offended at the reſentments I have had "for you, and without doubt they juſtly puniſh me "for having rendred you the adorations which are "due to the *Divinities* alone: nothing more *pure*, "nothing more diſintereſſed, and nothing more "paſſionate ever eſtabliſhed it ſelf in a ſoul, than "the thoughts I have had for you, and I may truly "ſwear, that by all the misfortunes of my life they "have not been altered one moment: But why, "*added he, paſſing from this thought to another*, why "do I ſeek for juſtifications, if all things plead

"for

" for my innnocence, and if that poſſibly I be not " accuſed in the judgement of *Cleopatra*? All my " crime without doubt is, that I have appeared leſs " amiable than *Tiberius* to the inconſtant *Cleopa-* " *tra*, that I have been declared the enemy of *Cæ-* " *ſar*, and of the *Roman Empire*, and that I have " ſeemed ill confirmed in the throne whereunto I " remounted by arms, as by arms my father had " fallen thence. My fortune alone hath committed " all my offences, and the ungratefull *Cleopatra* re- " members not how I have deſpiſed all for her, " and how for her ſake I refuſed thoſe Crownes " which a little after I recovered with the price of " my blood, and have ſince loſt through her cruelty " onely.

He ſtaid himſelf ſome moments upon this thought, but a little after he repented himſelf of it: " Ah " *Cleopatra*! *replyed he upon himſelf*, can I make this " judgement of you without offending you, and " ſince I have ſerved you, ought not I to have taken " notice ſo far of your generous inclinations, as ne- " ver to ſuſpect you of baſeneſs and diſloyalty? " Ah without doubt you are not capable of it, and " for this infortunate who complains of you, I " have ſeen you refuſe advantages great enough to " move me not to have this unworthy belief of your " courage. Whom ought I then to accuſe, and to " whom ought I to impute my diſgrace? To " whom, *replyed he*, but to *Tiberius*, to the cruell, " cunning *Tiberius*? and it is he alone, it is he alone, " which by ſome trick of his diſſembling and perfi- " dious ſpirit hath ruined my fortune, and thrown " me headlong from the place whereunto by my

" love

" love and ſervices I was mounted above him: It
" is to *Tiberius* that I ought to addreſſe my ſelf;
" and it is of *Tiberius* that I ought to demand for
" my juſtification that life which I have ſo unluckily
" left him: He ſhall give the remainder of it to the
" reparation of that repoſe which he hath ſo cruelly
" deprived me of, and to morrow, to morow it
" ſelf (ſeeing my ſtrength permits me, and I have
" no more wounds to retain me) I will go to ſeek
" out that tormentor of my dayes, and ſacrifice
" him before the eyes of that ambitious *Livia*, and
" that *Tyrant* which contrary to juſtice and his own
" word upholds him, and perſecutes me. If I muſt
" periſh in this deſign, as the apparences are very
" great that it muſt be ſo, in the ſad condition
" wherein we now are, we ſhall periſh without re-
" gret, and we ſhall loſe no more than life, the
" loſſe whereof merits not at this time the leaſt re-
" ſentment of griefe.

In theſe diſcourſes and thoughts, which took him up a part of the whole day, he engaged himſelf ſo into the wood by the private paths, that he loſt all knowledge of thoſe ways by which he ſhould return, and being arrived to one of the extremities of the wood, he ſaw it was bordered upon by a little meddow, which ſeparated it from another grove more verdant, and in appearance more ſhady than that he had croſſed through. It was that, which appeared to him more truly like the fatall wood of *Syracuſe* whereof he made mention, and wherein he had the laſt ſight of *Cleopatra*: The thought he had of it drew ſighs from his breaſt, and looking upon it with an emotion, which had ſomething of ex-

extraordinary in it: *If as thou hast the resemblance*, said he, *of that cruell place, where I saw my self condemned to so many deaths, so the Gods had given thee the same glory, and did permit thee to containe* Cleopatra *within thy circuit, I should reverence thee as a sacred place, and I should kisse with Idolatry the grasse which her feet had prossed*: In saying these words, whether it were out of some curiosity which in his sadnesse was not ordinary with him, or the little care he had of quitting his solitude to returne to his company, but he crossed the little meddow and entred into the grove: there he found the trees greener, the grasse fresher, and the shadow more delicious than in the wood which he had quitted, he saw there likewise divers allies artificially composed, and other beauties capable to retain him there longer than he was resolved to stay. He sought there as he had done elsewhere, the most solitary places, and did nothing but crosse the allies which lay in his passage, and being arrived at a pleasant streame which had its originall in the wood, after he had walked a while by the side of it, a little wearinesse which his long walk had caused, made him take notice of the green bank that lay by the water side, with design to repose himself there for some few moments.

He let his languishing body fall upon the grasse, and after he had washed his mouth with a little water to quench his thirst which began to trouble him, he leaned his head upon one of his hands, and beholding the cleare water of the brook which ran along upon the gravell with an agreeable murmur: *My fortune had a passed like yours*, said he to them, *and the*

*the ſwiftneſſe of your courſe can be compared to nothing better than to that of my happineſſe, which hath appeared and diſappeared in my ſoule without leaving any thing but the cruell traces of its paſſage:* As he uttered theſe words with divers ſighs, he lifted his eyes to heaven with a very pitifull action, and a little after laying his head at the foot of an old Oak, the ſad thoughts to which he abandoned himſelf laid him inſenſibly aſleepe, and whether it it were through the paines of his walk, or his watching the night before, his eyes were cloſed with ſleep which for ſome moments charmed his diſquiets.

Whileſt he ſlept, two Ladies, faire though with ſome inequality, above all that ever the Heavens framed beautifull, walking along by the ſtreame lighted unawares upon him. She which was leaſt poſſeſſed with ſad thoughts, and who though ſhe were very faire even to admiration, yet was inferiour in ſome reſpects to the beauty of her companion, did firſt perceive the Prince aſleepe, and ſtopping her ſelf at this adventure: *Siſter,* ſaid ſhe to her companion, *ſee, here lyes a man in our paſſage, What ſhall we do? Let us take our walk elſewhere,* replyed that divine creature, *ſeeing that after the perils we have ſcarcely yet eſcaped we ought to feare the worſt of all adventures: Our enemies,* anſwered ſhe who had ſpoken firſt, *are not in a condition to do us any great diſpleaſure, and our defenders are not far from us; this is that which makes me a little bold, and to tell you the truth of it, I received a few dayes ſince, ſo much ſatisfaction from an adventure like to this, that I ſhall hardly hinder my ſelf from looking*

upon

*upon this man a little more narrowly*: With theſe words ſhe quitted her hand, and went ſome ſteps forward by chance on that ſide whether the Prince had turned his face: and ſhe no ſooner ſaw that ſweet majeſticall countenance compoſed of all the moſt accompliſhed features that nature had ever framed in a perſon of his ſexe, but ſhe remained exceedingly ſurprized; and out of a curioſity which the firſt veiw cauſed, approching a little nearer, ſhe contemplated more at eaſe, that which ſhe had but imperfectly taken notice of at a farther diſtance. The Prince was pale and a little changed by the greatneſſe of his diſpleaſures, but not ſo much but that the faire Lady which veiwed him found in his perſon great ſubjects of admiration. When ſhe was confirmed in her opinion by her attentive beholding of him, ſhe deſired to make her companion participate of the ſight, and returning to her with markes of aſtoniſhment which appeared in her face: *Siſter*, ſaid ſhe to her, *either I ſhall have no credit with you, or at my intreaty you ſhall ſee the man by all appearances the moſt worthy to be looked upon in the whole world: Appearances*, replyed this faire Lady with a ſigh, *are moſt commonly deceitfull, and it is not upon appearances that we ought to ground our judgements.*

Speaking theſe words, She ſuffered her ſelf to be led, though with ſome repugnance, within ſome few paces of the ſleeping Prince. She caſt her eyes upon his viſage, which on that ſide might be entirely ſeen, but ſhe had not veiwed it many moments, but that there appeared in her's all the markes of a ſtrong aſtoniſhment, and maugre the change he had

had ſuffered, knowing him eaſily by the image which ſhe carried of him in her memory, at firſt ſhe remained mute and unmoveable, not being able better to expreſſe her firſt apprehenſions than by ſilence and immobility: but a little after having confirmed her ſelfe in her knowledge: *O Gods!* cryed, ſhe out ſtepping back, *O Oods! it is Coriolanus.* She uttered theſe words with ſo high an accident, that the Prince was awakened by them, and lifting up his head to look about him, the firſt object that preſented it ſelf to his view was that of the two Ladies who had raiſed him from his ſleepe. Their brightneſs cauſed in him ſuch a reſpect as made him riſe from his place, and his profound ſadneſſe not being able to hinder him from caſting his eyes upon ſuch ſparkling beauties, he had no ſooner fixed them upon theſe two faces, but that upon the faireſt of the two he perceived all the features of *Cleopatra.*

Never was there aſtoniſhment like to that of the King of *Mauritania* in ſo unexpected an incounter; and if the Princeſſe *Cleopatra* (for it was ſhee indeed) was ſurprized at this adventure; *Coriolanus*, who probably had little cauſe to hope for it, was ſo touched therewith, that he could ſcarcely preſerve any remainders of knowledge in ſo ſtrong a ſurprize. He continued ſome time for action little different from the Oake againſt which he leaned, and like to perſons under ſome charme, which tyes up all the functions of their body and ſoul, whileſt that *Cleopatra* between the armes of *Artemiſa* upon whom ſhe had caſt her ſelf, ſhewed all the ſignes of a confuſion like to that of the Prince; and feeling her ſelf deprived of part of her ſtrength, ſhe

ſate her down at the foot of a tree, where by the aſſiſtance of the Princeſſe ſhe endeavoured to recover her ſelf.

*Coriolanus* could no ſooner open his mouth, but that with a great cry he invoked the name of his Princeſſe, and following his firſt emotions, he moved from the place where he was, to run whither his love called him, and go caſt himſelf at *Cleopatra's* feet: but at the ſame inſtant his misfortune came again into his memory; he remembred that he was in diſgrace, that he was odious to *Cleopatra*, and that he was baniſhed from her ſight, and by this remembrance the impetuoſity which ſconded his deſires was moderated, and from this firſt heat, he fell into a coldneſſe which kept him more confuſed and timorous than before. Many different thoughts preſented themſelves to his mind, but he found them all either difficult or dangerous, and in the uncertainty wherein he was, either to accoſt her whom he adored, or to fly from the incenſed *Cleopatra*, he quaked and trembled with deſire and feare both at once. He armed himſelf at laſt with ſome reſolution, and believing that the Gods might have ſent him this adventure for his juſtification, and that he might put himſelf in danger to loſe it either by his negligence or timorouſneſſe, he adventured himſelf, and with a ſlow and uncertain pace he advanced towards the place where *Cleopatra* ſate. Yet he approched but within ſome paces of her, not believing himſelf in a condition of preſuming upon any greater liberty; and falling upon his knees with an action altogether ſuppliant, and conformable to the thoughts of veneration

which

wh ch he had for this divine Princeſſe, without daring to lift up his his eyes upon that awfull countenance, he began to ſpeake with a trembling and unaſſured voice. *It is not my deſign, Madam,* ſaid he to her, *it is fortune that preſents me to you, and I was too religious in the obedience which I owe you, to ſeek occaſions of appearing before the eyes of my incenſed Princeſſe: I had no longer languiſhed out this unfortunate life of mine, ſince I know that it is odious to you, if I had not believed that I ought to employ the miſerable remainders of it, which your change ha h left me, in my juſtification; and if by the inviolable fidelity which hath alwayes engaged me to you, I had not been obliged to uſe all my endeavours to dye in the teſtifications of my innocence. I know not, Madam, whether I find you ſtill in the ſame eſtate wherein you were when this miſerable received his condemnation, and poſſible it is, that by the reflection you have made upon all the actions of my life, or by the goodneſſe of the Gods which never abandon an oppreſſed innocence, you may have ſatisfied your ſelf that I have not merited thoſe miſeries to which you have condemned me. I ſpeake to you, Madam, as a criminall in your thoughts, and I had much rather ſubmit my ſelf to accuſations, againſt which my conſcience fortifies me, & againſt which the truth it ſelf will defend me, than to imagine that the change of my fortune proceeded onely from the changing of your mind. I have received too great proofes of it's conſtancy, to believe that it hath been capable of ſo cruell a revolution, and I ſhould conceive a thought which without doubt might offend you, if I ſhould judge that the fortune of Tiberius hath deſtroyed mine, and at-*

*tribute that to inconſtancy, which without doubt you have done for reaſons to me unknown.*

The Prince had ſaid more to this purpoſe, if the Princeſſe which till then had hearkned unto him without looking upon him, had not lifted up her eyes and interrupted him in this part of his diſcourſe: *you have had reaſon,* ſaid ſhe to him, *to make this judgement of me, and though you have been capable of a black infidelity, yet you have been ſufficiently aſſured that* Cleopatra *had an heart too well ſetled for being ſuſpected of any ſuch thing. I ought not to have opened my mouth ſo much as to have ſpoken to you, and whether it be chance or deſign which preſents you again unto me, contrary to my expectation and deſire, I ſhould have fled from your firſt view, as from the ſight of my moſt cruell enemy; but that I may render you yet more black, and more criminall before the Gods, and before men, I will, as unworthy as you are, proteſt unto you once for all, that if by your ſhamefull perfidiouſneſſe you had not merited my hatred, and my diſdain, in ſtead of that affection which I had blindly given you, I ſhould have deſpiſed not onely* Tiberius, *and all men beſides, but even the Empire of the Univerſe for you alone. if it be ſo,* replyed *Corielanus, and that by the infidelity wherewith you reproch me, I have rendred my ſelf unworthy of that fortune, there is no death cruell enough for the puniſhment of my fault: neither will I fly from it, and you ſhall ſee me, Madam, to repaire my crime in part, fall upon the point of my ſword without repugnance, and without any other reſentment of my death, than that I have merited it by my perfidiouſneſſe: But firſt, Madam, I beſeech you, by the memory of thoſe former good-*

goodneſſe, which by your accuſation I have ſo unworthily abuſed, do me the favour to informe me what the crime is which renders me ſo black, and ſo odious. Heaven is my witneſſe, that it is ſo far unknown to me, that I could never ſo much as imagine the leaſt ſubject of this reproch, and it is but to learne this truth that I linger out my unfortunate dayes, and that I Wander, ſince I have the liberty, into places where I may receive ſome knowledge of it. I will not repreſent unto you, to move you either with intereſt, or compaſſion, the condition wherein I am for the love of you: It is a ſmall thing that for your ſake I have armed the powers which govern the earth againſt my ſelfe; It is a ſmall thing, that having recovered for you onely a very puiſſant Kingdome, I I have loſt it again for want of ability to go and defend it in the condition wherein you had put me; and it is a ſmall thing to ſee me exiled, ſtript of all, a wanderer and vagabond in countries which are all my enemies, Without ſupport, without retreat, and without any Sanctuary againſt ſuch great adverſaries: Theſe evils are ſcarcely conſiderable for Cleopatra, and they are too light to ſet before her eyes, with any hope that ſhe will make any reflection upon them: but beſides the loſſe of all that I might have acquired either by my ſword, or by my fortune, beſides the loſſe of my repoſe, together with the loſſe of Cleopatra, which expunges all the reſt out of my ſoul, to conclude my pitifull deſtiny with the loſſe of my life, without having any knowledge, without having any ſuſpicion of the cauſe of my misfortunes, this is it, which poſſibly is worthy of your pity, and it is for this onely that I will implore it, With a finall proteſtation

*that I will draw no other advantage thence but this, to see my self condemned with reason by her whom at the last end of my life I neither can nor will accuse of any injustice.*

The Princesse *Cleopatra*, as obdurate and prepossessed as she was with a cruell opinion, could not heare this discourse of *Coriolanus*, without manifesting some markes of tendernesse, and the rootes of the onely affection she had had in her whole life, were still too well fixed in her mind to leave her without pity and without resentment at the sight of this despairing Prince, and the remembrance of those things which he represented to her. Nevertheless she strove against her passions, and hardly retaining some teares which were ready to overflow her eye-lids: *Wherefore doest thou return*, said she to him, *wherefore dost thou return, unfaithfull Prince, to renew my sorrowes, and oppose thy self to the repose, which reason possibly had reestablished in my mind? What interest hast thou (after thou hast so unworthily abandoned me) to act the passionate lover before me afresh, and needlessely to require new markes of that weaknesse which hath precipitated me into those disquiets wherein I have passed but too much of my life for thy sake, and to please both innocence and ignorance of a crime, which thou hast endavoured to publish to all the world? At long as thou wert faithfull to me, my acknowledgement and my affection could never be moved by any consideration whatsoever, and I as well as thou have opposed and incensed for thy sake alone, those sovereign powers, to whom the Gods have given an absolute command over me. I had done more yet, if by thy black infidelity thou hadst not too*

far

*far diſpenſed with me; and if fortune had replaced upon my head the Crownes which ſometimes were in the diſpoſing of* Anthony, *thou ſhouldeſt have ſeen me uſe them more generouſly, than thou haſt done that which the Gods had reſtored to thee whileſt thou were innocent, and which they have made thee loſe, ſince that by thy diſloyalty thou haſt rendred thy ſelf unworthy of their protection. It is by their Juſtice alone that thou art ſtript of all, and exiled, wandring without retreat or place of ſafety; but though theſe miſeries are too light for thy crime, they witneſſe for me that I have not contributed to them, and that I have had no more part in them, than I had in thoſe Kingdomes, which thou hadſt deſtined, and didſt offer with thy ſelf to more happy perſons. Do not reproch me then with evils which I have never been the cauſe of, and which I never ſo much as wiſhed thee: I am contented to accuſe thee of ingratitude and unworthineſs, and to manifeſt markes of ſorrow for thy ſhamefull change, which poſſibly thou haſt not deſerved, without wiſhing any greater puniſhment to thy treaſon, than my forgetfulneſſe and diſdain.*

*But at laſt,* the tranſported Prince cryed out, *ſhall I not know this treaſon, and ſhall I ſee my ſelf condemned, and condemned by a Judge whom I cannot call unjuſt, without having any knowledge of my crime? What,* replyed the Princeſſe, *wilt thou ſtill, for a concluſion of thy perfidiouſneſſe, deride her whom thou haſt ſo unworthily abandoned, and art thou not aſhamed, by a baſe and unprofitable diſſimulation, to make as if thou wert ignorant of a crime, which thou haſt manifeſted thy ſelf to the whole world, and which thou haſt endeavoured to conceale neither from my*

*knowledge, nor from the whole Roman Empire,* answered the Prince, *if it be known to me, as without doubt it ought to be, if I have so publickly committed it, aggravate by your last reproches, which you will heape upon me for it, the remorse I ought to feele, and if not to informe me of it, seeing I am not ignorant, yet to convince me before this faire Lady which heares us, let us understand from your mouth the treason which I have committed against you.*

*Artemisa* who heard this dialogue with wonderfull attention and suspence, and did favour *Coriolanus,* as much out of the esteeme and amity which his presence might cause in all those which saw him, as for the advantageous relation she had heard made of him a thousand times by her *Alexander,* at this last discourse turning her self towards *Cleopatra*: *Sister,* said she to her, *this Prince demands so small a matter, that, if he were yet more criminall than you represent him, you could not refuse it him; and whether he makes himself ignorant, or is so really, you will do him but little favour, when you shall set before his eyes the offence he hath committed against you*: *Ah Sister,* replyed *Cleopatra, though this man little deserve any satisfaction how small soever, and though you oblige me to a thing, to me painfull and unprofitable, when you desire that I should informe him of that which he himself hath discovered to the whole world: yet I will do it to please you, and I would willingly make him blush, if it be possible, at the last reproches I owe to his unworthinesse.*

The Princesse was about to proceed, and *Coriolanus* hearkning to her with all the confidence his innocence could give him, expected from the end

of

of this converſation either his death or his juſtification, when ſhe was interrupted by a great noiſe, which obliged the Princeſſes to ariſe all affrighted from the place where they were. Their feare was not without reaſon, and they were hardly got up upon their feet, but they ſaw themſelves ſet upon by ten or twelve horſemen which were in ſearch of them, who having left a party of their companions engaged in combat againſt them from whom the Princeſſes might hope for ſuccour, had run over part of the wood to find them out. They had no ſooner diſcovered them, but that he which marched in the head of them cryed out with joy to his companions, *See here they are*: and with theſe words having cauſed them to be environed on all ſides, he had no ſooner caſt his eyes a little neerer upon them, but that he knew, not onely *Cleopatra*, whom he ſought for, but the Princeſſe *Artemiſa* likewiſe: He appeared aſtoniſhed at this ſight, and recovering his ſpeech, after ſome moments of ſilence; *Ah my friends*, ſaid he, *how happy are we to day! Behold the Princeſſe* Artemiſa; *ſhe muſt accompany her whom we ſeeke, and our fortune will be accompliſhed.* He had ſcarcely uttered theſe words, but foure or five of his companions alighted, and whileſt thoſe which remained on horſeback ſtopped the paſſage to hinder the flight of the two Princeſſes, they advanced towards them to take them.

*Coriolanus*, who ſince the moment that he had been interrupted, had beheld their action without being aſtoniſhed, no ſooner ſaw theſe enemies approach *Cleopatra* and *Artemiſa*, but he put himſelf be-

before them and drawing his ſword, which at that time was all his arms, he preſented himſelf in their defence: The number of his enemies and the advantage they had over him of horſe and arms was not capable to daunt him; but onely caſting a look upon *Cleopatra*: *Madam*, ſaid he to her, *this accident hinders my juſtification, but the death I goe to ſuffer for you without regret, will poſſibly juſtifie me in part.* He had not ended theſe few words, but that one of theſe barbarians had already ſeized upon the daughter of *Anthony*: but his boldneſſe was fatall to him, and the valiant King of the *Moores* giving him a blow with his ſword upon the arme which he had advanced, ſeparated it from his body, and put him into a condition to do no more outrage to that he loved. After this blow, with an admirable readineſſe, he fell upon another who held the Princeſſe of *Armenia*, and finding free paſſage for the point of his ſword whither he erected it, he thruſt it in up to the hilts. They which continued on horſeback having ſeen the ſuddain fall of their companions, advanced to revenge them, and two amongſt them ſpurring on their hórſes upon the valiant defender of the two Princeſſes, had overthrown him with their ſhock, if he had not been ſheltered by a tree, againſt which he threw himſelf; from the foot whereof ſingling out one of the barbarians in his paſſage, he reached him with the point of his ſword, where his Cuiraſſe was defective, with ſo much ſucceſſe, that he pierced him to the heart, and made the barbarian fall down dead to the ground.

From this place *Coriolanus* by his admirable valour

lour might have defended his life; but he heard the cryes of the Princeſſes, and ſeeing them between the armes of divers men, he neglected his own ſafety to run to their defence: *Mars*, the god *Mars* himſelf could not have performed actions like to thoſe of this great Prince, and his deſpaire redoubling his forces, made him paſſe amongſt the barbarians for a *Demon* of valour, or a whirle-wind which mingling it ſelf amongſt them with unconceiveable fury, preſented death unto them on all ſides where they would aſſaile him. *O how might the incenſed* Cleopatra *have found in theſe miraculous actions, if ſhe had had the liberty of taking notice of them, great occaſions to be appeaſed, and how well might ſhe have judged, that with ſo noble a courage infidelity could hardly find a place!* She was already in the power of one of her enemies, when ſhe beheld his throat pierced by the ſword of *Coriolanus*, and was all covered with the blood that he vomited out upon her, as he fell at her feet. Preſently after this action the Prince was violently juſtled by divers horſes at the ſame time, and being neere *Cleopatra*, he was overthrown with her upon the graſſe, though as he fell he raiſed up his arme to hold her: The Princeſſe fell upon *Coriolanus*, and her fall fell out well for the Prince's ſafety, who without doubt had periſhed either by the ſwords of his enemies, or under the feet of their horſes, if they had not been affraid of killing the Princeſſe with him, and if their commander had not cried out unceſſantly to them to take an eſpeciall care of her. *Cleopatra* got up again very readily, and *Coriolanus* making uſe of his left hand in that action,

and

and holding his ſword in his right hand for his defence, had ſtill one knee upon the ground, when as he feeling himſelf preſſed upon by one of his enemies, who went to run his horſe over him behind, he turned himſelf half towards him, and with the edge of his ſword gave the horſe a black blow over the noſe, the horſe being hurt ſtood up on end, and his Maſter pulling the bridle too hard, pulled him backward upon himſelf with ſo rough a fall, that for a long time he was not in a condition to hurt *Coriolanus*. In the very ſame poſture he thruſt his ſword into the belly of another horſe; but at the ſame time he could not hinder himſelf from being thrown to the ground the ſecond time; and one of his enemies on foot whom he took hold of as he fell, and drew along with him to the ground, falling upon him, endeavoured to draw his ſword from under him, to thruſt it into his throat, whileſt another turning about on horſeback ſought ſome way to kill him, without hurting his companion. This was that which ſaved *Coriolanus* his life the ſecond time, and holding him cloſely embraced who was upon him, he tooke from him all meanes of doing hurt, and covered himſelf with his body againſt the ſword of his companion. He was extremely weary with the great paines he had taken, and he under whom he lay was a man of an extraordinary ſize and ſtrength; but that did not hinder, but that, after a long diſpute, *Coriolanus* brake his enemie's ſword, juſt as he had almoſt diſengaged it from under him, and thruſt him twice into the body with the truncheon of it. The barbarian wrung him with the rage of a dying enemy

nemy, and *Coriolanus* thruſting him with a ſtrong arme, eaſily turned him over on the other ſide.

After this action he had need of all his diligence to get up, and he which was on horſeback, putting towards him, when he ſaw him no longer covered by his companion, was likely without doubt to trample him under foot, if the Prince, as he aroſe, had not preſented the point of his ſword to the horſe's eyes, who being affraid of it, durſt come no neerer, though his maſter ſpurred him on. When the Prince was quite got up upon his feet, the barbarian which ſaw him victor over ſo many enemies, and tooke him for ſomething more than an human creature, had not the courage to expect him, but put on his horſe at full ſpeed, following the trackes of his companions, which retired with the Princeſſes they had taken away.

*Coriolanus* ſaw himſelf then without enemies, but he had no longer the ſight of *Cleopatra*, or at leaſt he had but a glimpſe of her afar off between the armes of her raviſhers, and he perceived with unſpeakeable regret that ſo many actions of valour that he had lately performed, had onely ſerved for the ſafety of his own life, and not for the defence of *Cleopatra*. He ſighed at it with grieſe and rage, but he did not long amuſe himſelf in complaints, and ſeeing himſelf by a prodigious felicity eſcaped from ſo great a combat without wounds, he reſolved to purſue after her, without expecting any longer ſuccours; but becauſe, being on foot, and without armes, he was not in a condition to make any great haſt, nor give her any great aſſiſtance, he was minded to put on the armes of one of thoſe

he

he had ſlain, and to accommodate himſelf with one of the horſes which after their Maſters death were grazing in the wood at liberty. He went to one of the barbarians, who was of a ſize little different from his own, and deſpoyling him of his armes, he began to arme himſelf with them with all poſſible ſpeed.

He had juſt done faſtning the leathers of his head-piece, and caſt his eyes about him to chooſe, amongſt three or foure horſes which he ſaw without Maſters, that which was moſt proper for his deſign, when he ſaw coming towards him at full ſpeed ſix horſemen armed *Cap a pied*, that way which the Princeſſes came. Their approch did not one jot diſmay him, and in the griefe he then felt, all danger whatſoever was uncapable of terrifying him. Theſe men after they had beheld the dead bodies, and the markes of the combat which he had performed, they drew neere the Prince, and one of them coming forwarder than the reſt, asked him newes of the two Princeſſes: *If ye are of the company of their raviſhers*, ſaid the Prince unto him, *finiſh that which your companions have begun againſt me: and if you ſeeke them to ſuccour them, behold the way, ſaid he to them, pointing towards the Sea-coaſt, which thoſe cruell wretches carry them, and whither I am about to follow you.* In another condition and at another time theſe men would not have quitted the Prince without longer diſcourſe, and without informing themſelves more fully of divers things capable to cauſe their aſtoniſhment and their curioſity; but the impatience which ſpurred them on gave them no leiſure; and he had no ſooner ſhewed

ed them the way that the Princeſſes were carryed, but that without hearing more, they put on their horſes upon the track which yet appeared freſh, and before that *Coriolanus* could catch one of the horſes that were feeding, they were quite got out of ſight.

Being mounted at laſt upon a ſtrong bodyed horſe, which he believed to be in a condition to do him ſervice, away he went with all the ſpeed he could poſſibly make, and followed amongſt the trees the track of the barbarians, which carried away with them his hopes, and all his life. A throng of redoubled ſighes proceeded from his breaſt, and imputing his bad fortune ſometimes to the incenſed Deities, and ſometimes to himſelf, he found himſelf in a more violent agitation, and in a thouſand times more cruell combat, than that he had lately finiſhed. He made reflection, as much as the ſwiftneſſe of his courſe would give him leave to do, upon the ſtrange adventure of this day; and not knowing whereat he ſhould be more aſtoniſhed, either the meeting or the loſſe of *Cleopatra*, he found a double occaſion to deſire death, both in the perſeverance of *Cleopatra* to hate him, and in the carrying away of *Cleopatra*, to which he believed himſelf to have contributed, by the feebleneſſe, which as he thought, he had ſhewed in her defence. The great and prodigious efforts which he had made uſe of in this occaſion, ſeemed unto him unworthy of his ordinary valour, and looking upon himſelf with diſdain, *Ah my hand!* ſaid he, *ah my ſtrength, in what neceſſity have ye baſely abandoned me, and in what occaſion could ye have been more neceſſary than*

*in*

*in the defence of Cleopatra! ye have seconded my courage with succesſe, when I have fought for the intereſts of* Cæſar, *and when I have employed you for the recovery of a Crown; and you diſgrace your ſelves and quit me when the conſervation of my Princeſſe is concerned! Ah ye Gods, which vouchſafe no pity to the miſeries of my life, by what crimes could I poſſibly draw your eternall wrath upon my head? was it not enough for the unfortunate* Coriolanus *to be expoſed to the hatred and diſdain of* Cleopatra, *but that he muſt have alſo the diſpleaſure to ſee* Cleopatra *between the armes of thoſe inhumane raviſhers, which poſſibly may rob him of her ſight for ever.*

He continued ſome moments in judging wherein he was the moſt unhappy, whether in his diſgrace, or in the carrying away of *Cleopatra*: but after he had reaſoned with himſelf a while: *Ah!* ſaid he, *let us make no judgement upon it, we are unfortunate in the ſame degree both in the one and the other, and the misfortune of being hated and diſdained by* Cleopatra, *could not have been equalized but by the loſſe of* Cleopatra: *Alas!* added he, in purſuance of a thought which ſucceeded the former, *but for this misfortune, I had poſſibly been upon the point to give a ceſſation to the former: When theſe barbarians interrupted us, I was about to have learned of my Princeſſe the crime whereof I am accuſed, and no doubt but in the evidences of my innocence which ſhe would have diſcovered, I ſhould have found my juſtification! But Fortune that enemy of mine, which without pity hath declared her ſelf for my ruine, could not diſſemble in this accident, and it was not from her that I ought to expect this favour, ſeeing it is by her*

*meanes*

*meanes that I lose all, and by her it is that I see my self exposed to eternall miseries. She did not present* Cleopatra *to me, contrary to my expectation, but to redouble my misfortunes by this last assurance of her indignation, and to ruine me utterly with the regret of seeing that which I adore, totally changed as she is, and as to me insensible fallen into the power of those monsters, which have ravished her from my eyes: Let us follow nevertheless,* added he, *let us follow that we love even to the utmost end of our life, and let us render the succours we owe without any consideration: Cleopatra is possibly no more lost to us in the armes of her ravishers, than she will be in the embraces of* Tiberius, *or of some other rivall to whom she may have destined her self; and we shall reap no advantage to our selves, by the succour which we give her, if it please the Gods that we be so happy as to give her any; and yet we ought to employ our selves in her service even to the last drop of our blood: and though we should take her out of the hands of her ravishers onely to put her into the hands of* Tiberius, *we must close our eyes to our own interest, blindly to involve our selves in hers, and leaving her all the remorse which her change may cause in her, dye in the glory and satisfaction of having done our duty even to the end of our life.*

In these discourses, and these thoughts which accompanied his course, the afflicted Prince traversed all the wood, and came to the Sea-shore, where, by a misfortune like to that of *Cæsarion* some dayes before, he lost all track of the horses, which till then he had exactly followed. He continued in this place unresolved, looking about him on every side,

and considering upon the choice of the way he was to take, and he was in this condition, when a *Cavalier* clad in rich and stately armour, and gallantly mounted, passing some paces from him, made a stop to take a view of him; *Coriolanus* to refresh himself from the heat which he had endured had his beaver up, and his face was almost entirely discovered; this was that which stayd the Unknown, who presently knew the lineaments which he had engraved in his memory, and whileſt that *Coriolanus* marched by the Sea-coast, but much more slowly than he had done till then, out of the uncertainty he was in which way to take, the Unknown marched seven or eight paces from him by his side, having his eyes still fixed upon his visage, and marking in his action a great deale of uncertainty and irresolution.

The King of *Mauritania* being attentive onely to the pursuit of *Cleopatra*, scarcely took any heed of him, and when he did perceive him, he took him for one of those, which he had seen a little before go in pursuit of the ravishers. In this thought and others wherein he was too profoundly engaged, he followed the way he had taken, without speaking to him, and they passed some furlongs together in this condition, till the Prince lifting up his head, and seeing this man still by his side with all the appearances of a person that had some design against him, he began likewise to view him with some attention, and was about to aske him what he was, and to what intent he followed him, when the Unknown preventing him, and breaking silence first which till then he had kept: *Ah! I have con-*

*sidered*

*ſidered too much*, cryed he, *I muſt dye; or be the death of this perfidious, whom I have ſought ſo long:* Speaking theſe words he drew his ſword, and oppoſing the Prince in his paſſage: *Defend thy ſelfe, Son of Juba*, ſaid he to him, *I muſt give death or receive it.* The *Maurita ian* Prince who was not naturally over-patient, and who had at that time his humour exaſperated by his diſcontent, eaſily diſpoſed himſelf to the combat; and he would with all his heart have made the efforts of his choler to have fallen upon the firſt object that preſented it ſelf, if he had not found it an obſtacle to the ſpeedineſſe of his purſuit. This hindrance did ſomewhat abate the firſt motions of his anger, and looking upon the man, which ſtood before him with his Sword advanced: *And what art thou*, ſaid he to him, as he was putting down the beaver of his helmet, and laying his hand upon his Sword, *thou which demadneſt the combat of me at a time wherein my ſtay is worſe than the death thou threatneſt me withall?* I am, replyed the Unknown, *the greateſt of thy enemies; thats enough to oblige thee to fight: yes, tis enough*, anſwered the furious *Coriolanus*, *and it may be too much for thy life.*

Speaking theſe words he drew that famous ſword, upon which victory had attended in ſo many combats, and clapping ſpurres to his horſe, which he found very good and proper for his purpoſe, he threw himſelf upon his enemy, who let fly at him with the like impetuoſity. Their ſhields ſuſtained the firſt blowes, but if they fell without any other effect, they made the two warriours know at leaſt mutually the force of the armes that gave them:

they gave one another divers others at the ſame time with theſame ſucceſſe, & if the Unknown found nothing new in the valour of *Coriolanus* whereof he had ſeen ſufficient proofe, *Coriolanus* found that in the courage of his enemy, which he had never met with but in the combat which he had ſome few dayes before with the valiant *Britomarus*. Their choler on either ſide quickly appeared in their mutuall precipitation, and if the Unknown was animated by a violent paſſion, the cruel obſtacle which he brought to the ſuccours of *Cleopatra*, quickly made the reſentment of *Coriolanus* mount to a degree which rendred it little different from his. They employed on both ſides more force than art in their combat, and yet neither of them forgot any thing, which might conduce to the victory: Their blind fury without doubt was advantageous for them, and if it had permitted them to ſearch the defect of their armes, they would have drawn blood each of other in divers places, whereas beſtowing their blowes without choice and judgement, they fought a long time without any hurt.

*Coriolanus*, whom this delay put into deſpair, and who well perceived that the ſucceſſe of this combat would not be ſo ſpeedy as he did imagin, preferring the ſuccour of *Cleopatra* before all other conſiderations, and the repugnance he had in himſelf againſt the action which he was about to do, retired ſome few ſteps, and making a ſign to his enemy that he had ſomething to ſay to him: *Though thou ſhouldeſt be Tiberius*, ſaid he, (*for thou canſt be no other than* Tiberius, *if thou art the greateſt*

of

*of my enemies, and it is onely to be thy death that I have preserved my life) permit that our combat may cease for one houre, and joyn thy selfe with me in a businesse, wherein possibly thou art no lesse interessed, than my selfe: Afterwards we will finish our quarrell, and thou art not ignorant, that no peace can be established between us, but by the death of one of us. Tiberius*, replyed the Unknown, *is not more thine enemy, than my self, and all the reason he had to attempt thy life, is now centred in my self, and since it is for this design onely that I have sought thee through the whole world, our combat cannot end but with the life of one of us. Ah! it shall be with thine then*, answered the enraged Prince, *and it is by this uncivill refusall, that, maugre thy base dissimulation, I know thee to be Tiberius.* These words were scarcely ended but they fell one upon the other afresh like two *Lions*, and the *Mauritanian* Prince being out of patience with the length of the combat, spurring up his horse to the side of his enemy, and having avoyded the point of his sword which was presented at him, he seized upon his body with such force, that by all his strength he could not disengage himself from between his arms: and though *Coriolanus* his horse had received the blow which was aimed at his Master, which wounded him mortally in the neck, the bounds he made through the pain of his wound, could not hinder but that the King of the *Moores* pulled his enemy out of his Saddle, just as he was constrained to quit his own for feare his horse should fall upon him, whom he perceived to faile between his legs. They fell both to the ground, and their fall was so boisterous, that it amazed them

both, and made them let go their hold; they got up again with great ſpeed, and prepared to finiſh their combat on foot; but the Unknown found himſelf troubled with his Caſque, the leathers whereof were broken by the fall, and by a weighty blow he received being turned upon his head, did hinder his ſight more than it ſerved for his defence, therefore ſtepping back a little, he pulled it off himſelf, and left his face uncovered, and his head diſarmed.

*Coriolanus*, maugre the heat that animated him, had no ſooner caſt his eyes upon the viſage of his enemy, but in ſtead of *Tiberius*, or ſome other moſt odious perſon that he expected to ſee, he beheld with an unparalell'd amazement his dear and well beloved *Marcellus*. In the whole courſe of his life he had never lighted upon any adventure which ſurpriz'd him like this, and when he ſaw that this enemy which had appeared ſo eager, & full of animoſity to deſtroy him, was next to *Cleopatra* the deareſt perſon to him in the world, and that friend upon whom he had founded his laſt hopes, his griefe failed but a little of executing that, which the armes of ſo many enemies could not do in that dayes action. The firſt teſtimony he gave of it was by a loud exclamation; *Ah* Marcellus, cryed he, *ah my brother is it you*! *yea perfidious man*, replyed Marcellus, *it is* Marcellus, *but no longer thy brother or thy friend; and that* Tiberius, *for whom thou haſt taken him was never more thy enemy, than* Marcellus *is: O God*! cry'd the Prince, with a very ſad and pitifull geſture, *and do you likewiſe* Marcellus, *do you abandon me, and after the loſſe of my Kingdome,*

and

*and the loſſe of* Cleopatra, *doth this* Marcellus *a thouſand times more deare to my ſoul than my own ſelfe, this* Marcellus *from whom I expected my laſt refuges, and my onely comfort, not onely abandon me with my fortune, but aſſault my honour and my life more cruelly than ever* Tiberius *did? Ah pierce then,* continued he, caſting his ſword upon the ground, *pierce, cruell and inconſtant friend, this heart which I preſent thee, this heart which thou accuſeſt of treaſon and unworthineſſe, and this heart which yet was never capable of a change like yours. May it pleaſe the Gods that I may never defend againſt thee the life which is ſo odious to thee, and if it create any impediment to thy intentions, let us ſacrrifice it a thouſand times rather than ſuffer that it ſhould any more croſſe the deſignes of my ungratefull friend. I had not preſerved it, after the loſſe of all that the Gods and fortune had given me, but that I believed that the amity of* Marcellus *was ſtill left me. But ſince that beſides the loſſe of all other things that I could call good, I am deprived of the amity of* Marcellus, *who contrary to his promiſe eſpouſes the quarrell of his Uncle my enemy and my perſecutor, and that poſſibly by my death ſeekes to regain* Cleopatra, *whom he had ſo generouſly beſtowed upon me, let us offer up our life either to his repoſe or to his fortune, and let us diſpute nothing with him, to whoſe benefits all was ſometimes due, and to whom, in memory of them, We can refuſe nothing: Though I am ignorant of all other crimes, I cannot be ignorant of this, wherewith my conſcience reproches me, that I haue lifted up my ſword againſt thee, and my friendſhip which is not altered by the attempts which thou haſt made againſt my life, though thou*

*knew'ſt me, will never pardon me thoſe which I made againſt thine, though I knew thee not.*

Whileſt *Coriolanus* ſpake in this manner, *Marcellus* who had ſtay'd himſelf, after he had ſeen him caſt away his Sword, looking upon him with an hundred different motions, which were remarkable in the changing of his countenance; but his ſoul being prepoſſeſſed with an opinion, which made all the diſcourſes of *Coriolanus* to paſſe for falſe and full of artifice, they did not worke that effect upon his ſpirit, which according to the excellency of his nature they ſhould have done, and after he had hearkned to him with impatience enough, taking the word with an action altogether paſſionate: *Ah unworthy and unfaithfull friend*, ſaid he to him, *to what end doth this diſſimulation ſerve thee? haſt thou found any thing in this encounter which thou didſt not expect, and canſt thou hope for any remainders of friendſhip in the ſoul of* Marcellus, *after thy ungratefull and unworthy uſage of him? and hath he made it appeare in the affaires thou haſt had with* Cæſar, *that his intereſts were more deare to him than thine, and could he have any thought of depriving thee of* Cleopatra, *after he had done all that he hath done to make her thine? No,* Coriolanus, *never ſeeke farther for an artificiall diſguiſement of a perfidiouſneſſe which thou wouldſt not have concealed from any man: Retake rather that ſword which thy remorſe, and not the remainders of thy friendſhip, hath made thee quit, and if it be not to defend a life which was more deare to me than my own, let it be to make him periſh, who, as long as he lives, will juſtly reproch thee with thy infidelity. But tell me,* ſaid Coriola-

nus

rius interrupting him, *tell me in the name of the Gods, what infidelity is that which I have committed againſt* Cleopatra, *and againſt thy ſelf? what is the crime for which I wander up and down as a vagabond, and expoſed to all manner of misfortunes, without having received any knowledge of it? and what have I done, that could make thoſe perſons for whoſe ſake onely I live, to become my moſt cruell and implacable enemies? I deſire,* O Marcellus, *either this favour of thee or my death, and inſtead of that reſiſtance which thou deſireſt of me, that thou mayeſt give me the more honourable death, I will caſt away not onely my ſword, but theſe armes too, which oppoſe the paſſage of thine.*

The reſentment, and the naturall goodneſſe of *Marcellus*, made at that time a combat in his Spirit, which *Coriolanus* might take notice of by ſome teares which trickled from his eyes, and all the indignation that tranſported him could not hinder him from ſeeing in the viſage of his Enemy, the reſemblance of that perſon whom he had moſt dearly loved in the world. Yet he oppoſed himſelf to theſe motions as much as poſſibly he could, and beholding him with eyes wherein through his choler and deſpite ſomething of tenderneſſe and compaſſion might be diſcerned: *Go unworthy man,* ſaid he to him, the Gods ſhall puniſh thee for me, *and ſeeing it is not for the hand of* Marcellus, *who unfortunately was thy friend, that the vengeance of thy crimes is reſerved, Heaven, which begins to puniſh thee with evils which I never wiſh thee, will beſtow upon thy infidelity better than I can do, the paines that are due unto it:* With theſe words without looking

looking any more upon *Coriolanus*, he ran to his horſe which was not far diſtant from him, and getting upon him with admirable readineſſe, he put him to his full ſpeed, and in a few moments diſappeared from the eyes of *Coriolanus*.

The Prince remained ſo confounded and ſo afflicted both together at this laſt accident, that he could find no meanes to ſerve himſelf of that great courage, from which in the misfortunes of his life he had received ſo great aſſiſtances, and repaſſing his memory in a moment over the deplorable condition of his life, and thoſe things which had happened unto him that day, from the aſtoniſhment which theſe ſtrange events produced in him he fell into a paſſion of griefe that all his conſtancy was not able to ſupport. Beſides that *Cleopatra* was incenſed, or changed, and raviſhed from his eyes by her barbarous enemies, he found *Marcellus*, in whoſe amity alone he had founded his laſt hope, more changed than *Cleopatra*, and as much his enemy as *Tiberius* could be. He could not make this reflection without abandoning himſelf to griefe, and breaking ſilence wherein his aſtoniſhment had kept him a long time: Ah cryed he! *This it is to diſpute too much againſt the deſtinies, there is a neceſſity of dying, ſince our life is odious to all the perſons we love, and the earth which might furniſh me with places of refuge from the powers of* Auguſtus, *hath none for me againſt the hatred of* Cleopatra, *and the enmity of* Marcellus. *I muſt content this pitileſſe fortune, which after it had raiſed me enemies which I might have reſiſted by force and valour, armes enemies to my utter ruine, againſt which my courage*

*courage and my valour are not capable to defend me; I owe my blood to* Cleopatra *to repaire that offence, whatſoever it may be, which I have committed againſt her: I owe my blood to* Marcellus *to waſh away that infidelity wherewith he reproches me, and I ſhall give it unto them both without regret, if by my death I may juſtify my life, and teſtify unto them by my end that I never had a ſoul capable of ingratitude and treaſon.*

He took up then, full of a deadly reſolution, the ſword which he had caſt upon the ground, & in the tranſport which then poſſeſſed him, he had poſſibly executed ſome horrid thing againſt himſelf, if he had not call'd to mind at the ſame time that *Cleopatra* was the prey of Barbarians, amongſt whom her honour and her life were in hazard, and that he owed her his aſſiſtance even to the extremity of his life. This remembrance ſtay'd the effects of his deſpair, and fixing all his thoughts in an inſtant upon the aſſiſtances which he owed to his Princeſs: *Stay* Marcellus, ſaid he, *I will acquit my ſelf towards thee, when I ſhall have acquitted my ſelfe towards* Cleopatra: *I have no leſſe a quarrell with her than with thee, and beſides the reparations which I owe to the infidelity wherewith ſhe reproches me as well as thou, I am obliged, in the condition wherein I have ſeen her, to ſuccour her to the laſt of that blood which thou demandeſt of me.* At theſe words ſheathing his ſword, he dreamed of nothing more than to purſue after the raviſhers of *Cleopatra*; but by a redoubled misfortune he found himſelf on foot, and caſting his eyes upon his horſe, he ſaw him a few paces off, approching neer his end upon the ground

where

where he had poured out all his blood. This surcharge of displeasure awakened in him new thoughts of despair, and hardly could he vanquish them by the last resolution he had taken: *Ah cruell Heaven*, cry'd he, being transported beyond his ordinary moderation by the violence of his grief, *ô destinies without pity! are ye not yet satisfied? have ye any affliction left to throw upon this unfortunate, whom ye take for the mark of all your cruelties? Ah too cruell* Marcellus, *how sharply dost thou revenge the offence wherewith thou reprocheſt me, in depriving me of the meanes to succour* Cleopatra, *or to goe and ſeek my death in the occaſions of ſerving her!* Then he turned his eyes on every side, uncertain what to do; he was alone on foot, covered with heavy arms, ignorant of the way that his enemies had taken, and for his last hindrance, the day was just shutting in, and darkneſs began to spread it self over the earth. The Prince, after he had ruminated a while, believed at last, that the shorteſt and sureſt way for his design was to return to *Tiridates* his house, which according to his judgement could not be far from that place, where he might find horses, and other armes, and men to accompany him in his pursuit. After he had taken this resolution, he turned himself that way which he believed was the shorteſt to bring him to the house.

Since his departure thence, *Tiridates* and his two guests had passed the day there in leſſe violent employments, than his, although they were tormented with the same passions, and the courteous Prince of the *Parthians* had spent the better part of it in the entertainment of the two wounded stran-

strangers. He had endeavoured upon this design to vanquish the redoublings of his sadnesse which had seized upon him by reason of some evill presages, and fearefull dreames, which had persecuted him all all the night, and striving to dissemble in part the effects which they had produced in his mind, he had rendred his first visit to the valiant *Britomartus*, whom for his admirable qualities he respected, and caused to be served with extraordinary considerations: he had without doubt engaged him in the pursuance of his history according to his promise, if the King of *Mauritania*, whom he would not deprive of his part of this satisfaction had been present, and if he had not feared to create him the trouble of making the relation twice; yet he put him in mind of it, that he might be prepared at the Princes return, and after he had entertained some time with him, he passed into his chamber, who came last: he found him in a good condition as to his health, and his hurts were neither great nor dangerous; but his soul suffered cruell inquietudes which were remarkable in his discourse and in his countenance. His two men, which he had sent to seek for, were come, of whom he retained one one to serve him, and had sent away the other with commissions which he had given him: Upon the hopes he made him have of the success of his employment, he had reposed himself a little, and he is newly awaked from a short sleep when *Tiridas* entred his chamber: That which they had learned each of other concerning their birth, obliged them to treat each other with respect, and *Tiridas* being approched neer the bed of the Unknown,

enquis

enquired of him concerning his health with all manner of civility and ſweetneſs. The Unknown, as fierce as he was of his own nature, could not look upon the continuation of *Tiridates* his bounties, whom he knew to be a Prince, without teſtifying to him ſome acknowledgement of them: and when he was ſate down by his bed-ſide, "I am in "a pretty good condition, *ſaid he*, in reſpect of "thoſe evils whereof by your officious cares I may "receive remedy; but as for them which depend "upon the Gods or fortune, I find my ſelf farre "enough from the cure of them: I would, *replyed* "*Tiridates*, it lay in my power to yield as much "eaſe to the diſquiets of your mind, as you have "received in relation to your bodily hurts, and I "would ſpare nothing that ſhould be in my power, "for the ſervice of a perſon, whom I judge by ma- "ny marks to be of a very ſublime condition. My "birth and rank are great enough, *replyed the Un-* "*known*, and if I knew to whom I ſpeak, and from "whom I have received ſo great aſſiſtance, after "you have laid the obligation upon me, I ſhall "make no difficulty to give you a perfect know- "ledge of it. I know you are a Prince, *continued* "*he, taking* Tiridates *by the hand*, but I am ignorant "both of your name and the blood whereof you "are deſcended; and you will adde not a little to "the good offices you render me, if by informing "me plainly to whom I am redeuable, you will give "me the means to open my heart unto you, and to "acquaint you not onely with my name and "birth, but alſo with the adventures, which put "me into a condition of having need of your ſuc- "cour.

*Tirdates*

*Tiridates* had no deſign to diſcover himſelf to this Unknown, and the cruell intentions of his brother were reaſons great enough for him to conceal himſelf; but, in the condition whereunto he was reduced, his life was little valued by him, and in reſpect of any thing that had been more important to him, he hardly could have denyed that which the Unknown earneſtly requeſted. He continued ſome time without replying, and then of a ſuddaine fixing his eyes upon his face: "There are but few "perſons, *ſaid he*, to whom I would make my ſelf "known, if I were in love with my life; but I have "too much regard to your deſire, & too much de-"ſire my ſelf to obtain the ſame thing of you, not to "grant you that which you demand of me: my name "is *Tiridates*, I am ſon of the unfortunate *Orodes* "K. of the *Parthians*, & brother of the cruel *Phraa-*"*tes*, who at this time weilds the Scepter of that "great Monarchy. The Unknown at theſe words looking upon *Tiridates* with greater attention than before, & with ſome marks of aſtoniſhment: *What*, ſaid he, *are you the Prince* Tiridates, *brother to* Phraates, *he who being perſecuted & purſued by that cruell brother, hath ſought for refuge in all the courts of* Aſia? *I am the very ſame*, replyed Tiridates, *he which hath wandred theſe* 12 *years to beg retreating places, & the ſame*, ended he with a ſigh, *to whom the cruelty of his brother hath created but the leaſt of his miſfortunes.* "Is it poſſible, *replyed the Unknowne*, "that you being *Tiridates*, ſhould not mark ſome "features in a face, which was once familiar unto "you, and that years ſhould make ſuch a change in "yours as ſhould hinder me from remembring

it!

" it! Certain it is, *replyed* Tiridates, that I find some-
" thing in the tone of your voice, rather than in
" your visage, that is not altogether strange to me:
" It should not be, *answered the Unknown*, neither
" will it be so, when you shall remember, that we
" passed together the beginnings of your exile, and
" that it was in the Court of the King of *Armenia*
" my father, where you took your first retreat:
" you are then, *added Tiridates*, the son of *Artaba-*
" *zus* King of *Armenia*: I am, *replyed the Unknown*,
" *Artaxus* his eldest son, and the successor of his
" Crown.

At this knowledge of the King of *Armenia*, *Tiridates* rising from his chair, to consider him a little neerer, and remembring by little and little the ancient Ideas which time had blotted out of his memory: " Ah Sir, *said he*, what fortune have I to
" have given you this poor retreat, in exchange of
" that which I found in your house? and how I am
" obliged to my fortune since she hath given me
" occasion to render some service to a King with
" whom in our youth I had framed so deare ac-
" quaintance: It is a great comfort to me, *added*
" *the Armenian*, *affectionately embracing him*, and I
" shall now with an entire confidence acquaint you
" with the particulars of my life, and the secret of
" my affaires which have brought me hither, and
" retain me here in this countrey. From these words they passed to an entertainment full of civility and mutuall offers, wherein the King of *Armenia* obliged *Tiridates* to give him a relation of his transactions, which he did, without speaking of his love, which was the most important thing of his life,

life, and when *Artaxus* was ſatisfied in what he deſired to know of him. "It is juſt, *ſaid he*, "I ſhould make you a recitall of thoſe things "which obliged me to quit my Kingdome, "to paſſe unknown into ſtrange Countreys: I will "do it, after a ſhort recapitulation of my life, and "though by ſome things which too juſt a reſent-"ment hath made me do, poſsibly I expoſe my ſelf "to ſome reproch from a ſpirit whoſe inclinations "have been all to ſweetneſſe, yet I will paſs over "this difficulty, to declare my ſelf wholly to you, "and I will acquaint you with the pure truth with-"out diſguiſe or artifice.

## *The Hiſtory of* Artaxus *King of* Armenia.

I will not ſpeak to you at all concerning the firſt years of my life, the beginnings whereof are paſſed away without any memorable event, and you have learned the particulars of my education during the time you ſojourned with us, when flying from the cruelty of the King your brother, you took your firſt retreat at *Artaxata*. You know the deplorable accident of our houſe, and how by the cruell ſurprize of *Anthony*, the unfortunate *Artabazus*, together with the Prince *Ariobarzanes* my brother, and the two Princeſſes *Arſinoe* and *Artemiſa* my Sifters, was taken priſoner, and led to *Alexandria*, where after two years captivity he loſt his head by the ſolicitation of the King of the *Medes*, and the command of *Cleopatra*. I was ſeventeen years of

age, when the King my father was taken, & during his imprisonment the *Armenians* having acknowledged me for their lawfull Prince, I employed all my power for the liberty of the King my father, and I forgot neither the solicitations of the friends of *Anthony* to free him by faire meanes, nor the way of armes wherein I joyned my self with *Cæsar* his enemy, to deliver him by open force. In fine it was the will of the Gods, & our unlucky destiny, that this deplorable Prince, against all manner of example, and against all Law divine and human, dyed publickly by an infamous hand, and left in his family not onely grieſe and desolation, but also too just subjects of eternall resentments for so bloudy an injury, and for an injury whereby the dignity of all Kings was unworthily violated.

I no sooner received the Crown, which the *Armenians* presently after set upon my head, but I received therewith most naturall and most lawfull desires of vengeance, and upon the very day of my coronation I engaged my self by a solemn oath, to employ all my power even to the last drop of my bloud to repair our disgrace, and not to spare for any consideration either age or sex in any that should fall into my hands, of the bloud or alliance of *Cleopatra*, or the King of the *Medes*.

A little after the Gods did in part revenge me, and the satisfaction I received by the last misfortunes of *Anthony* and *Cleopatra* is so well known to you, and to all the world, that I need not speak of it to you. These cruell persons perished by a just indignation of Heaven, which sacrificed them to the *Manes* of two Kings, and to the complaints

of

of ſo many perſons upon whoſe ruine their power was eſtabliſhed.

A little while after the wicked King of the *Medes* dyed miſerably: *Tigranes* his ſonne a young Prince of my age ſucceeded to his Crown, and I ſaw my ſelf without any other object of my vengeance than the children of the horrible murtherers of *Artabazus*. The misfortune of their Fathers, which poſſibly might have ſatisfied me, if it had happened unto them by my meanes alone, being befallen them by other hands, was not capable of contenting me, and I continued in a moſt firme reſolution to revenge my ſelf of the outrage they had done me, upon their children, and whatſoever had any relation to them either of alliance or amity. As for the children of *Cleopatra*, I loſt the meanes of my revenge by their retreat with *Cæſar*, and by the ſupport they found with the *Emperour*, the *Senate*, and people of *Rome*: they had no Provinces left which I might waſt with fire and ſword for my ſatisfaction, and to take it upon their perſons, I muſt force them in *Rome* it ſelf, and overturn the powers of the Empire, and the Emperour which protected them, with whom I had made an alliance very neceſſary for the conſervation of my eſtates.

I was then conſtrained to turn my thoughts againſt the Son of the unfaithfull *Median*, and when I ſaw my ſelf confirmed in my Kingdome, I dreamed of nothing but making war upon him, and after very great preparations, I entred into his Country with a conſiderable power, where I began my vengeance by all manner of acts of hoſtili-

ty: I will not entertain you with the particulars of this war; the events thereof were a long time doubtfull, and two yeares paſt wherein much bloud was ſhed on either ſide, fortune not abſolutely declaring for either party. The third yeare I had very great advantages, which made me expect ſome part of that ſucceſſe I had deſired. I took townes, I gained battells, and the fourth yeare I hoped with all apparence for the entire ruine of my enemy, when the Gods fortified him with great ſuccours, and weakened me by the loſſe of one ſingle man, which was more hurtfull to me, than the loſſe of a good part of my troupes would have been.

The King of *Cilicia* and his Son with a great army came into *Media* in defence of *Tigranes* their neere Kinſman, and a little after upon ſome effect of my revenge, which I extended, following my reſolution, upon all my enemies, having had ſome jarre with *Britomarus*, who at that time commanded the greateſt part of my troupes, this young warriour, who in an age ſcarcely diſtinguiſhable from infancy, might already be really accounted the moſt valiant of all that ever ware a ſword, quitted my ſervice, and to my misfortune carried elſewhere the effects of an admirable valour, which would have been very neceſſary for me againſt the reinforcement of my Enemies. The courſe of my good ſucceſſes was ſtopt, and my enemies being ſtronger than I, had ſome advantages which made me loſe all that I had gained in *Media*, and after ſome combats wherein fortune was not very favourable unto me, I was conſtrained to retire upon my fron-

frontire, where I made preparations for the laſt deciſion of our quarrell, when *Auguſtus* employed his authority to appeaſe our differences, and ſent *Mecenas* and *Domitius* with order not to depart from our Countries, before they had concluded a peace between us. I had that repugnance againſt it that you know of, and the Kings my Enemies being exaſperated by the death of ſome of their neere relations whom I had ſacrificed to the *Ghoſt* of *Artabazus*. had no more diſpoſition to it than my ſelf, But we muſt needs yield to the will of *Ceſar*, and when it was declared on his part that he would arme in favour of him who ſubmitted firſt, againſt him who made moſt reſiſtance, neither of us was bold enough to oppoſe it any longer, and having ſigned the Articles which *Mecenas* and *Domitius* preſented to us, we both of us laid down armes and contented our ſelves to keep our animoſity in our breaſts, without making it appeare any more.

I retired to *Artaxata*, whither a little after, *Ceſar*, whether it were that he deſired to have them as hoſtages of the treaty we had made, or that from the relation he had heard made of them, he had conceived a deſire to ſee them and have them with him, ſent to demand of me the Prince *Ariobarzanes* my brother, and the Princeſſe *Arſinoe* my Siſter, to have them brought up at *Rome*, to frame in them inclinations to the *Roman* party, and to treate them like divers Sonnes and daughters of the Kings his friends and allies, which were brought up with him and the Empreſſe *Livia*. This effect either of the amity or diſtruſt of *Ceſar* troubled me at firſt,

and yet the pretence was so faire, that I could not handsomely refuse that which he demanded, and the Prince and Princesse, at the first proposition which was made to them of it, having expressed no unwillingnesse to the voyage, I caused a magnificent equipage to be prepared for them, and sent them from *Artaxata*; they crossed a part of *Armenia*, and coasted *Licia* and *Pamphilia* by land; and afterwards they embarqued upon the *Egean* sea; but they embarqued in an unlucky houre, and a few dayes after by means of a terrible tempest they suffered a cruell shipwrack, and lost under the waves, their lives which were worthy of a better destiny. You may well believe that at an accident so deplorable, the relation of bloud onely might produce in me very sensible displeasures; but besides this naturall resentment, *Aricbazanes* and *Arsinoe* were two persons so uncommon, and so accomplished in the perfection of mind and body, that it would have been hard for any to have known them without shedding abundance of tears for their death. The Gods took out of the world all that was great and amiable in our family, and depriving me of a brother and a sister worthy of the esteem and the affections of the whole world, they have left me onely one sister worthy of the generall scorn, a sister which by her baseness and infidelity, hath stained with a shamefull blot the illustrious bloud from whence she is descended, and hath raised me all these troubles of spirit, for which I have abandoned my Kingdome, and by the means whereof I find my self in a strange condition.

Time had now given some consolation to the grief which we had suffered for the sad shipwrack of

half

half our family, and I lived in peace though againſt my will, at a time when I might have ruined *Tigranes* by joyning with the King of *Parthia* his enemy, againſt whom he made war, with ſucceſſes wherein Fortune diverſly ſported her ſelf, if I had not been hindred by the authority of *Auguſtus*, who would never permit me to break the peace which he had made me make with the *Medians*, nor to give my aſſiſtance to the *Parthians*, the cruell enemies of the *Roman* name, with whom he could not endure that his friends ſhould have any alliance; I paſſed my life, I ſay, in this forced tranquillity, when to overthrow my repoſe, and to blaſt the honour of our Royall houſe, *Alexander* the ſon of *Anthony* and *Cleopatra*, a worthy object of my lawfull vengeance, came unknown to my Court, with a deſign to give me yet more ſubjects of hatred than thoſe I had againſt him and his, for the cruell death of the King my Father.

*Tiridates* interrupted the King of *Armenia* in this part of his diſcourſe: *Alexander* the ſonne of *Anthony*, ſaid he to him, who was believed to be loſt at that time when I was at *Rome*, or at leaſt there was no news of him, was in *Armenia* then: He was there but too fatally, replyed *Artaxus*, and Fortune which in appearance preſented him to me to ſatisfie my juſt reſentments, ſerved her ſelf with him to render them more violent, and to carry on my diſpleaſure to the laſt extremities: I know you will condemne my rigour in the deſign I had to render what I ought to the *Manes* of *Artabazus*, and the oath I had made; but that ſhall not hinder me from relating to you the naked truth, nor from expecting

from you that you ſhould approve part of that I would have done out of a ſenſe of piety, of paternall love, and Honour it ſelf, too much intereſſed in the bloudy injury which we had received.

After theſe words, he recounted to him all that had paſſed at *Artaxata*, after he had known *Alexander* there, the taking of that Prince, his cruell impriſonment, the ſollicitations of *Artemiſa* for his ſafety, the extremity of danger whereunto he arrived, and in fine, all that which *Alexander* himſelf had related to *Ceſarion*, till his departure from *Armenia*, and the carrying away of *Artemiſa*.

*Tiridates* did not heare this relation without great paine, though it was made by a perſon intereſſed, who did partly ſweeten the greateſt ſtrangeneſs of his actions by the excuſes he made for them; and beſides that he naturally deteſted cruelty, the friendſhip he had contracted with *Coriolanus*, and the acquaintance he had at *Rome*, with the Princeſſe *Cleopatra*, Prince *Ptolemie*, and the greateſt part of young *Alexander*'s kindred, put him into great feare for him, in the recitall of the dangers he had run; and made him very averſe from the cruelty of *Artaxus*. The impatience he had to hearken to him ſufficiently appeared in his countenance; but when he ſaw *Alexander* eſcaped from the rage of his enemy, he compoſed himſelf, and all the complaiſance which probably he ought to have for *Artaxus* could not hinder him from diſcovering ſome part of his thoughts. *I am ſorry*, ſaid he to him, *that I am conſtrained to diſpleaſe you by the confeſſion I am about to make, and I profeſſe that if your intereſts do forbid me to heare of the carrying a-*

*way*

*way of the Princeſſe your Siſter with joy, I cannot afflict my ſelf with you to ſee* Alexander *eſcaped from the puniſhment you had prepared for him. He was altogether innocent of your diſpleaſures, and the Gods which are intereſſed in his protection, would not permit, that a life free from any crime ſhould ſuffer the puniſhment which they themſelves had inflicted upon the cpulable. Alexander,* replyed *Artaxus, was not innocent in my thought: after the oath I had made, ſeeing he was the Sonne of* Cleopatra, *neither was he ſo in effect, ſeeing he came into my dominions with deſignes whereof he hath made one part appeare, and would have put the other in execution, if Heaven which watches for the preſervation of Kings, had not prevented the effects, by the knowledge which it gave me of my diſguiſed enemy: Howſoever it be, mark the ſequell, and admire at the capriciouſneſſe of my fortune in the relation I am about to make you.*

All expreſſion would be too weake to make you comprehend the diſpleaſure I reſented by the double injury I received in the flight of *Alexander* and *Artemiſa*: *Theogenes* the companion of the traitorous *Sarpedon* was the firſt that received the puniſhment either of his weakneſſe in ſuffering himſelf to be abuſed, or of his infidelity in conſenting to their eſcape, and few of all thoſe that were apparently ſuſpected, eſcaped the juſtice which I cauſed to be executed upon them. Theſe teſtimonies of my griefe were publick, but the ſecret effects which it produced in my heart were yet more contrary to my repoſe, and poſſibly no mind was ever agitated with more violence than mine. Whileſt thoſe whom I had ſent in purſuit of my two fugitives

gitives, ranged up and down the Country in vain, I was tormented with despight, which had almost carried me to extremities against my self, and I had not one moments sleep but what was interrupted by my cruell disquiets: *What*, said I, *in Artaxata, in my prisons, upon the point of being sacrificed to my just vengeance, doth the Son of* Cleopatra *alone, disarmed, without the assistance of any of his friends, not only escape my justice, and deprive me of the pleasure and the glory of having rendred to my Father's Ghost part of what was due to it, but together with his life he robs me of my onely Sister, and aggravates the displeasures we have received from his race, by the last outrage he doth to ours? Is it not enough for this audacious enemy, to be born of the cruell murtherers of my father, but that he must needs come into my dominions to redouble my resentments, by the onely injury he could do me, and that he must have good successe in so bold a design at the instant that his neck was stretched out under the axe, and when I thought that all the power of man was not capable of guarding him from it? But O Gods! that which I am most sensible of is, that my own relations contribute to my griefe, and Heaven in causing the rest of my family to perish, hath left me a Sister onely to make her serve as an instrument to my shame, by her own; and it must needs be that in the Royall house of* Armenia *there must be found a Princesse base enough to abandon the interests of her blood, and to abandon her self to the Son of the executioners of her Father. At least if this perfidious* Ariadne *might find in the person of her suborner, an unfaithfull* Theseus, *by whom Heaven might revenge me of her treason*

*treaſon, I ſhould receive no ſmall conſolation: if the young deceiver ſhould leave her expoſed in ſome deſart and ſavage Iſle, or rather, O ye Gods, that by your indignation they might both periſh in the waves, how would my griefe be eaſed, and how heartily would I forgive fortune part of the injuries that ſhe hath done me? But O unworthy as I am,* ſaid I to my ſelf a little after, *why do I expect from my Enemies, why do I look for that from the Deſtinies which are againſt me, that which I ought to ſeek for and find in my ſelf alone? It is* Artaxus *himſelf, who is called to carve out his own revenge, it is by* Artaxus *himſelf that it muſt be executed: he muſt purſue himſelf, both his unfaithfull Siſter, and the young ſeducer, and go kill them both in thoſe places where they have ſought their refuges: For by the memory of this affront, the repoſe of his life will be eternally croſſed, and he cannot paſſe it either with honour or pleaſure, as long as his enemies triumph over him ſo many wayes, whileſt he hath made no attempt to ſatisfy himſelf.*

This thought did not lightly paſſe out of my mind, it fixed it ſelf there ſo ſtrongly, that at laſt I reſolved upon it, and after I had conſidered that I could receive no reparation from *Auguſtus*, when I ſhould make my complaints, but what would come too late, I tooke a firme reſolution to purſue after my enemies my ſelf. I pondered a long time with much irreſolution upon the courſe I ſhould take: at firſt I would have armed all my forces; but I knew not whither to conduct them, and not doubting but *Alexander* and *Artemiſa* were retired to *Auguſtus*, I found my ſelf too weake to plucke them

them thence by open force, and I could not with any likelyhood ſo much as ſuffer it to be propounded. At laſt after I had ſufficiently conſulted, Ipitched upon a courſe ſomewhat extravagant, but yet it ſeemed more agreeable to my mind, and I reſolved to part from *Armenia*, unknown, and with ſuch an Equipage as might not render me ſuſpected, to ſeeke out the Court of *Auguſtus*, who made his progreſſe through *Aſia*, and if I could there meet with my fugitives, as I did not doubt but I ſhould, I determined to deſtroy them both. You will tell me that I muſt needs be animated with a very violent paſſion that could carry me to ſuch extremities to abandon a Kingdome wherein by my abſence great troubles might be raiſed, to expoſe my ſelf to vexations and dangers wherein I might probably find the death which I went to inflict upon others. I will confeſſe to you that I was yet more paſſionate, and that to content my reſentments, I was capable of ſtranger reſolutions. At laſt I confirmed my ſelf, and in the ſpace of one ſingle day putting my moſt important affaires in ſome order, as much as my paſſion would permit me, I parted from *Artaxata* only with twenty horſe, carrying with me but this ſmall number of my Servants, which I had choſen out among the moſt affectionate, and the moſt daring. In this equipage after I was gone out of *Armenia*, I croſſed a part of *Cilicia*, where I kept my ſelf very private, not being ignorant, that by reaſon of the ha-

hatred which the King of that Countrey had againſt me, my life was in very great danger if I had been known. In this Countrey I underſtood that *Auguſtus* after he had viſited the Provinces of *Aſia* which were under his dominion, was paſſed into the Iſle of *Cyprus*, from whence he was going into *Egypt* to make ſome ſtay there: this newes obliged me to take a veſſell at the port of *Iotopa*, where I embarked my ſelf for *Alexandria*. In all my voyage both by land and by ſea, my reſentments gave me no reſpit, and the memory of the injuries I had received, rendred it ſelf continually ſo powerfull over my Spirit, that it hardly permitted me to taſte any moment of repoſe. Awakening very often out of the little ſleep it left me, and ſpeaking to *Alexander* as if he had been preſent: *Son of Anthony*, ſaid I, *thou art not yet eſcaped from my vengeance, and in thoſe places, wherein thou ſhalt believe thy ſelf moſt aſſured, thou ſhalt ſee thy irreconciliable enemy puniſh thee for the crime of thy parents, and the offence thou haſt done him. That woman unworthy of the name of a Princeſſe, and the ſhame of an illuſtrious race, ſhall receive the ſame puniſhment; and I ſweare before all the Gods that I will ſpare neither ſex nor proximity of blood, in taking ſatisfaction for the injury I have received. If my bad fortune robs my vengeance of the fugitive* Alexander, *there are ſtill ſome of the children of* Anthony *and* Cleopatra, *with* Auguſtus; *there is a* Ptolomie, *and there is a* Cleopatra; *the firſt of the two that ſhall fall into my hands, or poſſibly both of them together, ſhall pay without pity*

*for*

*for the outrages of their friends.* Alexander *was no more culpable of the death of* Artabazus, *than they: if they are innocent of my last injury, the former renders them criminall enough: and as by my Sister,* Alexander *hath revenged himself upon me, so by his brother or Sister I will revenge my self upon him, and if he escapes my just indignation, I shall find some part of my satisfaction in making it fall upon those that have relation to him.*

This was in effect my resolution, and I continued my voyage, upon the design of seizing upon all that I could meet of the blood of *Cleopatra* without any distinction or consideration. We had the winds very favourable divers dayes, but at the latter end of our navigation there arose a furious tempest, which tossed us up and down for two dayes space with horrible danger. I saw my self an hundred times upon the point of ending my resentments together with my life in the waters, and instead of the death which I went to inflict upon my enemies, I thought I should have found mine own. In fine, our fortune was such that we escaped from the fury of the waters, and my vessell proving able enough to resist, and our Sea-men being very expert in their art, it saved it selfe from the storme entire, and in a condition to pursue our navigation as before: Nay, I was so happy, that I was hardly turned out of my way by the tempests, and the same day that the storm ceased, we were within a dayes saile of *Alexandria.*

We sailed towards that City with speed enough, when as by a most prodigious effect of fortune, we met a vessell wherein we saw at first sight some-

thing

thing of pompe and magnificence in regard of its beauty, but by the violence of the tempeſt it was rendred unprofitable for ſailing, the maſts and the rudder were broken; and if it defended thoſe within from the danger of the waves, through the care they had of ſtopping the leakes, they had loſt the meanes of ſteering it according to their deſign, and it floated up and down almoſt at the pleaſure of the wind, though they that guided it laboured much to make it advance towards *Alexandria*. We paſſed ſo neere to them that we could diſcern theſe particulars, and when we could diſtinctly heare one another from one veſſell to the other, we ſaw men in the veſſell which we had met, who by their ſuppliant geſtures begged aſſiſtance of us, and one of them ſpeaking: *Friends*, ſaid he, *whoever you be, fortune preſents you with an occaſion of performing an action of goodneſſe, and in that to ſerve ſuch perſons who are able to requite that good office with great rewards; we are but a few perſons in this veſſell, and if you pleaſe to receive us into yours, you will render that ſervice to an illuſtrious Princeſſe, and to a perſon very conſiderable to Ceſar*: Theſe words, which I heard diſtinctly from the place where I was, cauſed me to come up upon the deck, from whence I demanded of him that had ſpoken, the name of that perſon conſiderable to *Caſar*, for whom he had implored our aſſiſtance: *It is*, ſaid he to me, *a Princeſſe, whom he eſteemes as much as if ſhe had been born of his Siſter* Octavia, *and it is, that you may know her by a name ſufficiently famous, the Princeſſe Cleopatra.*

This man had no ſooner uttered the name of

*Cleopatra*

*Cleopatra* to me deteſtable, but I trembled and ſhook from head to foot out of a ſtrange *Antipathy*; I changed colour divers times in a few moments, and I continued for ſome time ſo aſtoniſhed, that I was hardly capable of knowing what I did. I quitted my Kingdome, and I went unknown, and without a train, to expoſe my ſelf to great troubles and dangers to ſeek out my enemies, and fortune began to offer them to me by ſo uncommon an adventure, that it ſeemed to me that they had fallen into my hands by a moſt evident juſtice of heaven. This reflection which I quickly made, diſſipated my firſt amazement, and awaking me from my doting with a tranſport of joy: *O Gods*, cryed I out, *O fortune, how favourable are ye to me, and how am I obliged to the care you take your ſelves of chalking out the way to my vengeance! It is not time*, continued I, *to diſpute with the pity which her ſex may move; ſhe ſhall dy as being the daughter of* Cleopatra, *ſhe ſhall dye as being the ſiſter of* Alexander, *and by her death I will begin to revenge my ſelf both of the Executioners of* Artabazus, *and the Raviſher of* Artemiſa.

Speaking theſe words I commanded the veſſell to be grappled, and that was no ſooner done, but that followed by all my men, I leaped into it with my ſword in my hand. The few men that were there, men without arms, and of ſmall ability to defend themſelves, having marked my words and my action, and that, inſtead of perſons who might ſuccour them, they had met with mortall enemies, being excited with ſome fidelity to the Ladies whom they conducted, they would have put themſelves into a condition of making ſome reſiſtance; but

but this deſign was fatall to the firſt that prepared for it, and in a few moments a part of thoſe which oppoſed our paſſage, being fallen dead at our firſt blowes, their companions loſt courage, and crying out for mercy, they ran to hide themſelves in the ſafeſt parts of the ſhip.

My men killed ſome more of them, but I troubled not my ſelf with it, and being ſpurred on by the deſign which aimed onely at *Cleopatra*, I went to ſeek her in her chamber, where ſhe was ſhut in with two other women, making prayers & vows to heaven for deliverance from the perill whereunto they were expoſed. The door of the chamber was preſently broken open, and I no ſooner appeared at the entry with my bloody ſword in my hand, but theſe women being affrighted, expreſſed their fear by great out-cryes. *Thou muſt dye*, ſaid I, throwing my ſelf into the chamber, *daughter of* Anthony, *thou muſt dye.* I would have made ſome body ſhew me which was ſhe, that I might let my vengeance light upon none but her ſelf, but beſides that by the reſpect which the others ſhewed her, I might judge which was ſhe, by the relation which I had heard made of her admirable beauty, I preſently took knowledge of her, and her countenance being leſſe diſmay'd than her womens were, ſhe caſt her eyes upon me, which inſtantly diſcovered her to me. The view which I received at ſome far diſtance did not diſſipate my reſentments, and I went towards her with my ſword advanced, with a deſign that according to my opinion no thing was capable to divert; but when I had caſt mine eyes more neerly upon this miraculous beauty, and that

from the first dazling I passed to a more particular attention to the prodigies which presented themselves to my sight, I remained in the condition of those, whom the terrible visage of *Gorgon* converted into stones: my arm grew stiff in the air, my body continued deprived of all force and motion, my voyce was stopped in my mouth, and I did almost totally pass into the nature of those *metamorphosed Statues*.

At first my immobility onely, and the change of my countenance expressed my astonishment, and I contented my self to behold this adorable marvell, without having changed my posture, or appearing animated by any other motion, than that of my eyes; but a little after all my choler being insensibly dissipated by this bewitching sight, and these violent thoughts quitting their place by little and little, to others more tender and more powerfull, the sword which I held fell out of my hand at the feet of this divine Princess, and I not onely lost the design which I had against so precious a life, but from the fury which moved me to it, I fell into a shame and repentance, a thousand times greater than my choler had been.

I had retired some steps from the Princess, whence I kept my eyes fixed upon the Princess feet, not daring any more to lift them up to her face, and by my action I made her sufficiently take notice of the disorder and confusion of my soul: But at last I recovered out of this dump, and rallying up all my courage to serve me in this adventure, I fell upon one knee before her, and breaking the silence which I had so long kept: *Divine Princesse*, said I to her,

*it is not necessary that I should expresse my repentance to you in words: my visage and the condition wherein you see me so different from that wherein I appeared at first before you, sufficiently speak my confusion; and you may be pleased to know at length, that in stead of a furious enemy which some moments since attempted upon this sacred life of yours, you have a man at your feet full of grief for his crime, and ready to repair it with his own life, if there be no possibility of hoping pardon for it from your goodnesse. The point of this sword which I had drawn against you, returnes against my own heart, and it is but in vain for a man to arm himself to offend you, seeing that all armes are useless to defend ones selfe against you. I lay downe at your feet, together with this sword, all my choler, & all the design of revenge which I had framed against you and yours: Those cruell resolutions, though grounded upon some justice, could not preserve themselves against such enemies, and I see my selfe in fine reduced to implore your pity, I who thought to have beene without pity all my life towards the race of* Anthony.

At the end of these words I arose, to give order to my men that respect should succeed in the place of the disorder which they had begun in a place which was become sacred to me, and seeing that the astonishment of the Princesse was so great, that it had not yet permitted her to reply: *Believe not,* continued I, *that I am a pirate armed against you and yours for hope of booty; I will avow to you with a confession full of horrour, that it is your life I would have had, and* Cleopatra *onely that I sought for: this crime is monstrous, and the reasons wherewith I would*

*have excuſed it heretofore, cannot any longer defend me againſt you; but in fine, ſeeing I muſt needs ſay it again to you to my own confuſion, it was the blood of* Anthony *and* Cleopatra *which I would have ſhed: and to let you underſtand the cauſe I might have for it, it will ſuffice to tell you that I am* Artaxus *King of* Armenia, *ſon of the unfortunate* Artabazus, *whom you have ſeen a captive, and whom you have ſeen dye by the cruelty of your friends. The bloody injury I ſuffered in his death hath been ſeconded by other offences I have received from* Alexander *your brother, and in brief I was animated with reaſons ſtrong enough againſt your race, if it had produced me other enmies than you, and if my fortune had not confronted me with an enemy which diſarmed me ſooner than all the powers of the Empire could have done. Excuſe, Madam, the exceſſe of my reſentment by the lawfulneſſe of it, and ſeeing I have made all the thoughts, which the force of blood, and the love of my father, and my own honour had inſpired me with againſt your family, to give place to thoſe I have now for you; Do not in the name of the Gods keep any longer againſt a repentant and an humbled Prince, thoſe reſentments which a deſign too inhumane may juſtly have produced in you againſt me.*

I ſpake in this manner, & the Princeſs, who during my diſcourſe had had leiſure to compoſe her ſelf, anſwered me in theſe terms: *I praiſe the Gods, who inſtead of Pirats, whom we feared, have made us fall into the hands of a Prince who though incenſed againſt our family, is yet born of a royall blood, and endued with royall inclinations. Your reſentments are juſt, Sir, and though my birth inclines me to favour them, yet I can-*

not

*not diſapprove the anger you have conſerved againſt thoſe who were the cauſe of the King your father's death: if they were living, no perſon could condemne what the memory of ſuch an injury might make you undertake againſt them: but Heaven hath ſeverely puniſhed the outrage they did you, and the children they have left were not onely innocent of your injury, but they were partakers of it themſelves, and deteſted the cauſe of it as much as the age they were then of could permit them to do:* and Alexander, *whom you accuſe of ſome new offence, appeared, as young as he was as much intereſſed in it as if he had been of your family. This remembrance, Sir, will moderate the anger you have againſt that unfortunate houſe, and without doubt you have too much juſtice to confound the innocent with the culpable. Ah,* cry'd I, tranſported with a growing paſſion which began to take poſſeſſion of my ſoul with an abſolute power, *Ah! do not call the children of* Cleopat. *innocent, they finiſh what their mother had onely begun, and it is ordained by the Gods, that your houſe ſhould be fatall to the houſe of* Armenia.

Theſe words eſcaped me in the firſt motions of my ſpirit, and my heart, as I believe, uttered them rather than my mouth. In effect if at the firſt ſight of *Cleopatra* I was amazed, aſtoniſhed, and confounded; by the grace ſhe had in her diſcourſe, and the new marvells I diſcovered in her perſon, in a few moments not onely my inclinations were changed, but there ſucceeded to this aſtoniſhment confuſion & repentance, a violent love, which left nothing of liberty in my ſoul. Other perſons might poſſibly wonder to ſee me paſs ſo eaſily from one paſſion to

another quite contrary, but since you have seen *Cleopatra*, there is no necessity that I should seek to give you reasons of this change, the knowledge you have of her wonders, saves me the labour of a description of them, which without doubt would excuse the facility I used in rendring up my self. However it be, I was subjected as entirely to her powers, as if I had known them divers years, and possible it is that those who had passed part of their life in her service, were not more inflamed than I was in a few moments. *Ah how hard was it to defend ones self against the divine beauties of* Cleopatra, *and how weak are common resolutions to resist forces like hers!* I left my liberty at her feet, as well as my anger and my sword; and in my soul, where all the passions acted with violence, Love was presently at the height, and arrived at those extremities that no other but my self was capable of. Ordinary effects might have been produced by common beauties; but to have disarmed at the first sight an indignation which probably could not be appeased but by the blood of all the race of *Anthony*, and to have changed the cruell resolutions which had made me abandon my Kingdome, and expose my person to all manner of pains and dangers, into violent love, this was that which appertained to none but the beauty of *Cleopatra* onely. I became her Slave, I became her Idolater ever since she began to shew her self to my eyes with all her powers, and that the fright, which had concealed part of her charms, bing dissipated, her visage appeared to me in a more serene and composed condition. Behold in what manner my condition was changed in a small

ſmall time; from being furious and terrible I became gentle and ſubmiſſive, and I ſaw my ſelf reduced to implore pity of them, whom I had ſeen in need of begging mine. It would not have been difficult for *Cleopatra*, if ſhe would have attentively regarded it, to have known the diſorders of my ſoul; and my viſage ſpeaking the eſtate of my ſpirit with more expreſsions than my tongue could have done, made her without doubt take notice of the troubles which perplexed me by its ſeverall changes, but it was neceſſary that my mouth ſhou'd ſecond it, and my paſſion had hardly received a birth, but that it was too great and violent to be concealed.

Poſsibly at another time, and in another conjuncture of things reſpect would have tyed my tongue, and not have permitted me to declare ſo ſoon to the Princeſſe the thoughts which had ſcarce received any form; but as my love took birth by an extraordinary way, I did not believe my ſelf obliged to common formalities, and I judged that I might act as deſtiny acted in me. At length whether it were for this reaſon, or through ſome impetuoſity which tranſported my ſpirit above all reaſon, I could no longer retain that which would manifeſt it ſelf; and looking upon *Cleopatra* in a very ſubmiſsive way: *Divine Princeſſe*, ſaid I to her, *I have quitted my dominions, I have abandoned all things to go and deſtroy the children of* Anthony, *but through the indignation of heaven, which poſsibly hath not approved of my reſentments, I finde that in you, which I thought to have brought you, and if you be not ſenſible of compaſſion, you are in a condition of reveng-*

*ging your self upon all the designes I have had against you and yours. In fine, one way or another, it is fatall to the Kings of* Armenia, *to give their life to the* Cleopatras, *and what the father suffered by the ax of the former, the son is like to suffer by the eyes of the latter.*

I cast down my eyes at the end of these words, and *Cleopatra* did the like with a blush which mounted into her face. I expected some answer from her faire mouth, but when I saw she remained silent without going about to reply to my discourse: *I do not think it strange,* continued I, *that these words should surprize you, coming from a Prince from whom probably you ought not to expect them, and the condition wherein you see me is so different from that wherein you saw me when I entred into your chamber, that a change so suddain may with much reason produce an astonishment in you: Nevertheless it is very certain, that the same enemy which came with cruell designes against your life, exposes his own at your feet, which he would not preserve but to give it you entire, and that if you disdain it as unworthy to be offered to you, or detest it as belonging to an enemy, he will willingly sacrifice it either to your resentment, or to his own ill fortune. Looke no more upon me, adorable daughter of my enemies, as the revenger of* Artabazus, *but as a Son who followes the destiny of his father, and who will undergoe the sentence which you will condemn him to, much more willingly than his father did.*

I held my peace at these words, keeping my self in a very humble and suppliant posture, and the Princesse after she had staid some time longer with-

without ſpeaking, at laſt lifting her eyes towards me: " It is true Sir, *ſaid ſhe to me*, that I am no " leſſe ſurprized at your words, than I was affraid " at your firſt actions, and there was ſo little pro- " bability of expecting this change by ſuch meane " powers as mine, that I cannot without confuſion " give attention to the declaration you make me of " it. Howſoever, I account my ſelf as innocent of " the accuſation you lay upon me, as I was of the " fault of my parents, and it ſhall never be by my " deſign that you ſhall follow the deſtiny of your " father. I ſee my ſelf reduced by my deſtiny to " hearken to diſcourſes whereunto poſsibly at ano- " ther time and amongſt other perſons I ſhould not " have been expoſed; but I ſupport it with pati- " ence, and it is juſt that I ſhould ſuffer ſomething " from him, who hath received ſo cruell a diſplea- " ſure from my relations: If by my diſcourſes, *re-* " *plyed I*, you ſuffer any thing, the Gods are my " witneſſes it is not by my intention, and it ſhall " never be out of revenge that I give you my heart, " and diſpoile my ſelf of my liberty. Your powers " are too well known by your ſelf to let you find " any ſtrangeneſſe in this change, and though you " have not contributed to it by your own deſign, " yet you will not be innocent of it, if you do not " looke with pity upon the evil you have done " me.

*Cleopatra*, then compoſed her countenance to gravity and ſeverity more than before, and look- ing upon me with a coldneſſe accompanied with ſome diſdain: *You ſhall never be in a condition*, ſaid ſhe to me, *to have need of my pity, and it ſhall ne-*

*ver*

*ver be my intention to reduce you to it: I ſhall be very much obliged to you if for my ſake you would abandon the deſires of revenge you have conceived againſt the remainders of our family; but if you pleaſe, I will paſſe by that, or if I require any effect of your goodneſſe, it is onely this, that you would cauſe us to be conducted to* Alexandria; *the paſſage over thither is very ſhort, and there without doubt you ſhall receive thanks from* Cæſar *for the good office you have rendred to perſons who are not indifferent to him.*

Theſe words of *Cleopatra* did not preſently receive an anſwer, and the requeſt ſhe made to me was very unconformable to my intentions. Fortune had put her into my hands by a too extraordinary adventure to make me loſe all the advantage of it ſo quickly, & if her beauty had freed her from my choler, I could not conſent that her return to her friends ſhould ſo ſpeedily rob my love of her. I ſaw that in the very place where ſhe was ſubject to my power, and where in reſpect of the danger ſhe had run, ſhe had ſome cauſe to fear me, ſhe appeared little diſpoſed to any compliance with my love; and I had reaſon enough to fear, that when ſhe ſhould be no longer in the place where I might ſerve my ſelf with thoſe advantages which fortune had given me neer her, ſhe would reject my affections with diſdain, whereof I had noted ſome marks in her viſage and her laſt expreſſions. This conſideration made me reſolve not to have her back to *Alexandria* till I had better ſounded her inclinations and judged whether I might hope for any acknowledgement of my love from her, when ſhe ſhould

be

be at liberty; yet as my paſſion made me afraid to diſpleaſe her, I diſſembled my deſign to her, and after I had told her that I was diſpoſed to obey her will, prayed her to paſs out of her own veſſel which was broken and unprofitable for navigation, into mine, which was in a condition to do us ſervice. The Princeſs paſſed into it with her maids, and the few men that were left, the reſt having loſt their lives in the reſiſtance which they would have made againſt us. Of two chambers that were in the veſſel I left her the beſt, where having intreated her to repoſe her ſelf a while, I retired my ſelf into the other with my men, and having cauſed thoſe to be called who had the care of conducting the veſſel, I commanded them to ſaile ſlowly towards *Alexandria*, but not to land, and to keep themſelves along the coaſt ſome furlongs from the city. I cauſed them to take this way (though as I told you my intention was not to go to *Alexandria*) partly not to allarm the Princeſs, & partly becauſe the wind ſtood that way, and was quite contrary to our return for *Armenia*.

A little after night came on, and we having caſt Anchor in a place where we found ground, we paſſed the night at ſo neer a diſtance, that if the darkneſſe had not hindred us, we might have ſeen the walls of *Alexandria*.

Some while after I returned to the Princeſs, from whom I could ſtay no longer without great conſtraint, & being entred into ſome diſcourſe with her, ſhe prayed me to inform her what diſpleaſure I had received from Prince *Alexander* her brother, for whom ſhe was extremely in pain; having heard no

newes of him ſince the arrivall of his Equipage at *Rome*, after his return from *Pannonia*. I made ſome difficulty at the firſt to ſatisfie her deſire, fearing to incenſe her againſt me by the uſage I ſhewed to her brother: but becauſe I naturally hate to diſſemble, I was willing to let her underſtand the truth, and beginning to ſpeak after a ſhort intervall of ſilence: "Madam, *ſaid I*, I cannot give you a more "perfect teſtimony of the power you have over me, "than in making the relation you require: I feare "truly that by recounting what I have done, and "what I would have done againſt your relations, "I ſhall incur your averſion, and if you do not ex- "cuſe me by the juſt ſubject of my reſentments, "without doubt you will condemn them of effects "contrary to clemency; but ſeeing it is impoſſi- "ble to diſobey you, and my humour ſhall never "be to conceal my moſt ſecret thoughts from you, "and laſtly, what I have done againſt your brother "is leſſe criminall, than that which I have underta- "ken againſt you, I will inform you of all without "any diſguiſe.

After theſe words, I related to her all that had happened to her brother in *Armenia*, in the ſame manner that I related it but now to you; and though I endeavoured in ſome places to ſmooth over the roughneſſe of my proceedings, I could not do it ſo, but that the Princeſſe was troubled very often, and found in the confeſſion which I made to her, great cauſe to hate me. During my diſcourſe I took notice of it divers times by the change of her countenance, and by ſome exclamations which ſhe made, in thoſe parts of my relation, wherein

wherein ſhe ſaw her brother in the greateſt extremity of danger; but when I was at the end of my narration, looking upon me with eyes wherein her new reſentment was expreſſed, whatſoever ſhe did to diſguiſe it: *I muſt needs tell you,* ſaid ſhe, *and I cannot hinder my ſelf from doing it, that to have been capable of what you have recounted to me, you muſt have been the iſſue of a* Lion, *or ſome thing yet more cruell; and this perſeverance to make an innocent Prince dye a ſhamefull death, joyned with an obſtinacy againſt pity, which ſo many objects, and ſo many reaſons ought to have introduced into your ſoul, expreſſes an harſhneſſe of nature which I ſhould never have ſuſpected in the Son of a King. If my cruelty againſt your brother,* replyed I, *merits the horrour which you expreſſe at it, you will hardly excuſe that of the Queen your Mother, who without having received any injury from him, onely at the ſollicitation of his enemy, really executed that upon the perſon of a great King, which I would have done upon your brother in revenge of my Father. Yet I will not ſay before you that I am innocent, and I confeſſe that though I ſhould have been excuſable for putting to death the Son of* Anthony, *yet I ought to treat the brother of* Cleopatra *with ſweetneſſe and reſpect: but Madam at that time I was as ignorant of what was due to you, as I was of your perſon; and ſince that of your perſecutor and your enemy I am become your adorer, I condemn all that is paſt, and I tremble my ſelf at the memory of that which I have enterprized againſt your friends. Do not therefore, O divine* Cleopatra, *follow the example of that which you deteſt, avoid in your ſelf that cruelty which you juſtly condemn in others. This pity and this*

*good-*

*goodneſſe, which are ſo naturall to you, will find in me ſit matter to employ themſelves upon, and the more culpable I ſhall be towards you, the more commendable will your compaſſion be in exerciſing it's ſelf towards him who of all men hath rendred himſelf leaſt worthy of it.*

I uſed other diſcourſes to her, whereunto ſhe made little anſwer, and ſeeing that ſome part of the night was ſpent, and that it was time for her to take her repoſe, I bad her good-night, and left her in the chamber with her Maids. I know not what her thoughts were during the night, but I very well know that mine kept me awake till day-break, and this fair image was not a moment out of my memory. Theſe admirable beauties, whereunto the Sun without doubt never ſaw any equall, preſented themſelves to my mind with new forces, and all that could diſpute any thing againſt them in my ſoul was ſo diſſipated by the reflection I made upon them, that perſons grown old in love could hardly have been more ſubjected to them, than I was in a piece of one ſingle day: I conſidered then as much as I could poſſible the change of my condition, and ſeeing how different I was from what I had been ſome houres before, I could not think upon it without being amazed my ſelf, and admiring at the capriciouſneſſe of my fortune: "This morning, *ſaid* "*I*, thou didſt run as furious as a Lion to the ruine "and death of the children of *Anthony*, and this "night thou ſeeſt thy ſelf in a condition not to hold "thy life but from the daughter of *Anthony*. The "choler which agitated thee with ſo much violence "hath made way for another paſſion no leſſe vio-

"lent

" lent than thy choler; and if at the firſt appearance it
" conceales its cruelty from thee, it will make it ſelf
" known to thee in a condition wherein all the
" force of thy ſoul will not be able to ſecure thee.
" Certain it is thou loveſt the greateſt beauty the
" world hath; but thou loveſt a perſon whom thou
" haſt prepoſſeſſed with averſion and horrour,
" both by the relation thou haſt made her, and by
" that thou haſt attempted againſt her ſelf: ſhe
" will hardly love him who with a barbarous de-
" ſign hath preſented his ſword at her throat, and
" who was obſtinately reſolved to the very laſt to
" make her well beloved brother ſuffer a ſhamefull
" death. *Cleopatra* is not a prize to be obtained
" by outrage and cruelty, and what I could not
" merit by my blood and ſervices, I ſhall hardly
" gain by the horrible wayes which have brought
" me acquainted with her. O love! thou which
" eſtabliſheſt thy ſelf ſo unſeaſonably in an heart
" which never knew thee, what wilt thou have me
" do to march under thy Empire, and what way
" wilt thou open to me through the cruell difficul-
" ties which oppoſe my fortune? ſhall I go to re-
" quire of *Caſar*, and of that *Alexander* whom I
" have uſed ſo unworthily, a Siſter, whom chance
" hath put into my hands, in exchange of a Siſter,
" which he hath robbed me of? Ah without doubt
" the reſentment both of the brother and ſiſter
" doth oppoſe all the hope I can conceive upon
" that part: *Alexander* will call to mind with a juſt
" indignation, that I have cauſed him to be
" brought upon a Scaffold to loſe his head, and
" *Cleopatra* will no ſooner be at liberty, but ſhe
" will

" will look upon me as an executioner thirſting af-
" ter her blood, rather than upon one, who at
" firſt ſight hath ſurrendred up his heart to her.
" Shall I make uſe of my fortune and take the way
" back to *Armenia* to conduct *Cleopatra* into places,
" where by an abſolute power I may render *Cleo-*
" *patra* more conformable to my will? Ah this vio-
" lence will be contrary to that love which is e-
" ſtabliſhed in my ſoul with reſpect and obſervance,
" and if *Cleopatra* conſents not to it, I ſhall hardly
" diſpoſe my mind to offer her any conſtraint. What
" ſhall we do then, O love, and what counſell wilt
" thou give me in my irreſolutions? I diſcourſed within my ſelf in this manner, and I found ſo many difficulties on all ſides, that the day appeared before I had determined any thing.

When *Cleopatra* was fit to be ſeen, I went to give her good-morrow, and I found in her countenance diſdain and markes of diſlike, though out of prudence in the condition wherein ſhe then was ſhe endeavoured to diſſemble it, which I took for a very bad augury. After the firſt diſcourſes wherewith I accoſted her, approching to her in the moſt pleaſing and ſubmiſſive manner I could poſſibly: *May the Gods,* ſaid I, *be pleaſed to pardon you the ill you have done me, but I may truly tell you that I have ſuffered more ſince I have been with you, than I had ever ſuffered either by my paſſions, or the calamities of my family throughout the reſt of my life. It is no deſign of mine,* replyed the Princeſſe coldly, *and I am no more culpable of it, than* Alexander *was of the death of the King your Father.* This reply full of reproch made me bluſh, who at another time and

from

from another perſon could have heard a thouſand times as much without being moved, and looking upon the Princeſſe with an aire altogether paſſionate: *Do not compare,* ſaid I to her, *the innocence of your ſelf and yours in relation to the misfortune of* Artabazus, *to that wherewnto you pretend in reſpect of the ill you have done to his Son: that comes entirely from you, and your d ſign was not neceſſary to that which your powers could execute alone, without calling your intention to their aid. Theſe are they who conſpiring with my deſtiny entirely give me to you, and if you do not diſdain the affections of a Prince, who renders at your feet the homage of an eternall fidelity; together with my perſon ſuch as it is, I offer you a flouriſhing Crown by ſuch wayes as probably will not be diſapproved by your friends, which baniſhing the hatred of our houſes, will unite them by an eternall alliance: There is but a little probability,* replyed the Princeſſe with her former coldneſſe, *that you deſire alliance with a family againſt which you have had ſo bloody an hatred; and a paſſion which cauſes ſuch ſtrange effects as thoſe which it produced in you is not eradicated by a light impreſſion: Ah.* anſwered I all tranſported, *I am not onely entirely free from it, but all the motions of hatred which I have ſometimes had, are changed into motions of love, and for your ſake I will love all your relations. as much as ever I hated them. I know not,* added the Princeſſe, *whether you can expect the ſame change from them, it will not be eaſy for me to turn my inclinations towards you after that which I have beheld with my eyes, and what I have heard you relate concerning the cruelties you have exerciſed againſt my brother.*

*Cleopatra* was not over-prudent to make this declaration to me in a condition wherein she was totally in my power; but whether it were that she well knew her power over my spirit, or whether indeed her courage could not degenerate from it self, she regarded what she had always been by her birth more than what she was at thattime by her fortune, & did not by dissembling seek that assurance which she believed due to her in what condition soever she should fall into: "Ah cruell Princess, *said I* "*to her*, if you do not take heed, you go about to "cast your self into the same vice wherewith you "reproch me, and you will lose the advantages of "innocence and goodness which you have hitherto "had over me, if you appear more inexorable and "more void of pity than my self: I fear not that re-"proch, *answered Cleopatra*, & I shall be sufficient-"ly exempted from it, when I shall never procure "you nor wish you ill: Alas! *replyed I to her with* "*a sigh*, what greater evil can you wish me, than "that whereunto I see my self exposed by your ri-"gour? Do you believe that what I would have "made your brother suffer was more cruell? and "are you ignorant that the torments of the body "are not less violent than those of the minde? I made her divers other discourses upon the same subject, to which she answered with her former coldness, though knowing the power I had over her, she endeavoured sometimes to dissemble part of the repugnance she had against me:

In the mean time we sailed but slowly towards *Alexandria*, and before the end of the day we arrived some furlongs from the coast, but yet above the city,

city, where, as I told you, I had no intention to land. The Princeſs ſeeing her ſelf in this place prayed me to conduct her to the city, but I payed her with an excuſe, and told her that ſovereign Princes were not wont to enter into others territories without giving them notice, and that I was obliged to advertiſe *Auguſtus* of my coming, and deſire permiſſion to come into his dominions, before I ſet foot upon land. The Princeſs took this reaſon as well as ſhe could, and in the interim we paſſed the night in this place, our veſſel being covered with a great rock, ſeemingly expecting thoſe whom I feigned to ſend to *Cæſar*, but indeed waiting for a favourable wind to return towards *Armenia*. This night was likewiſe to me as full of inquietudes as the former, and the next morning I no ſooner ſaw the Princeſſe, but accoſting her with a very ſubmiſſive action: *Fair Cleopatra*, ſaid I to her, *you are ſufficiently revenged upon my cruelty, and thoſe friends of yours who are moſt intereſſed therein, will not order more cruell torments for me themſelves, than I have ſuffered ſince I have been with you: have ſome regard of them if you deſire to maintain your ſelf in the juſtice of your cauſe, and do not diſdain a King who not onely ſacrifices his reſentments to yours, but offers up his own ſelf to the indignation which his actions may have produced in you againſt him.*

The Princeſs, as I judged afterwards, conſtrained her ſelf not to anſwer me according the hatred which ſhe had conceived againſt me, and not ſo much as looking upon me: *I have no diſdain for you*, ſaid ſhe, *but I am but little miſtreſſe of my ſelfe, and there are perſons to whom my birth hath made me*

*ſubject, whoſe conſent you rather ought to ſeek, than mine, in relation to the offers you have made me: And who are thoſe perſons,* ſaid I, *to whom you have left this diſpoſall? 'Tis Cæſar,* replyed the Princeſſe, *'Tis* Octavia, *and above all, to* Alexander *my brother whom you know, to whom I have remitted the care of my deſtiny.* I knew well enough that ſhe was ſpiteſull in this diſcourſe, and that ſhe ſpake of *Alexander*, onely to ſet before mine eyes the uſage I had made him. In this thought beholding her with eyes which made ſome complaint of her rigour: *Ah Princeſſe,* ſaid I to her, *your ſpirit is more revengefull than mine, and that very* Alexander *with whom you reproch me, would without doubt be leſſe obdurate himſelf againſt a Prince of whom he is ſufficiently revenged: By the carrying away of my Siſter he is ſatisfied for all the outrages he had received in* Armenia, *and I aſſure my ſelf that in exchange for my Siſter he will not refuſe me his.*

The Princeſſe ſeeing her ſelf preſſed in this manner anſwered me no more, and the reſpect which my love cauſed in me to her, hindred me from importuning her any farther.

A little after thoſe whom I had ſent to *Alexandria* to learn the newes, and not to preſent themſelves to *Cæſar*, returned, and reported to us that *Cæſar* was not yet arrived at *Alexandria*, but was expected there within two or three dayes, and that he ſtaid at *Peluſium* where he landed, after he had ſuffered the fury of a tempeſt wherein he had loſt part of his veſſells. At this diſcourſe after I had continued ſome moments very penſive: *I am ſorry Madam,* ſaid I to the Princeſſe, *that this obſtacle*

*doth*

*doth for ſome dayes retard the deſire you have to ſee your friends, and it is neceſſary either that I attend here the arrivall of the Emperour, or that I ſend to* Peluſium, *to render him the ſame reſpect which I ought to have done at* Alexandria. *I know not,* replyed the Prieceſſe. *whether you have need of this precaution or not, but I, to whom it is not neceſſary, am permitted to enter into* Alexandria *without giving notice unto* Cæſar, *and you may, if you pleaſe, let me be conducted thither by thoſe of my own men that are left, without putting your ſelf to the trouble. Ah Madam,* replyed I, *The Gods forbid I ſhould ſo much injure the duty I beare you, and that I ſhould leave to others an honour which is dearer to me than my life: I will preſent you to* Cæſar *my ſelf, and I ſhall be glad to make it known, that Kings onely are worthy to be your conductors.*

I uſed other diſcourſes to her to defend my ſelf from the urgent deſire ſhe had to be ſet on ſhore, and to be left at liberty to retire her ſelf, by meanes of which ſhe opened her eyes to the truth, and plainly perceived that ſhe had no longer any power to diſpoſe of her actions. She beheld me then with eyes full of the marks of her reſentment, and having fixed them a while upon my face without ſpeaking. *I alwayes doubted,* ſaid ſhe to me, *that I was ſtill in the hands of our moſt cruell enemy, and your inclinations, though a little diſguiſed, cannot long conceale themſelves.* I had no longer either power or will to diſſemble my intentions, ſeeing well that we were no longer in termes to keep them private, & ſpeaking to her with more aſſurance than before: *'Tis certain,* ſaid I, *that I ſhall hardly diſpoſe my ſelf to part from*

*you, and that I am resolved to do what I can possibly to conduct you into* Armenia, *where I will lay my Crown, and person at your feet with an entire resignation: 'Do not condemn this design, Madam, which you have not examined; your condition will not be better in* Alexandria, *nor in* Rome *it self, than in a Kingdome wherein all things shall submit themselves to your Empire, and the Gods which disapproved all other revenges which I intended to take upon* Alexander, *have guided me themselves to the onely way of being revenged upon him without offending him.*

The Princesse could not then contain her self within the bounds of her ordinary moderation, and casting a look upon me inflamed with indignation: *Go barbarian,* said she to me, *and pursue thy vengeance by the former wayes, which are more natural to thee, than those which thou wouldest make use of to no purpose: in these discourses thou dost offer too much violence to thy intentions, and I will never force mine for a monster, who thirsts after our blood: the heart of* Cleopatra *is not to be gained by the effects of an horrible inhumanity, and if it be by the power which fortune hath given thee over me that thou pretendest to the accomplishment of thine intentions, know, that by a death, which I little feare, I shall know how to free my self from thy cruelty, and as soone as thou shalt cause thy vessell to be turned towards* Armenia, *I shall find in these waves, which will be lesse cruell and lesse odious than thou art, succour against the violence thou preparest for me.*

This discourse which she pronounced with a very resolute action, made me affraid, and calling to mind that she was the daughter of a mother who

knew

knew how to preferre death before captivity, I feared left ſhe ſhould execute what ſhe had threatned. In this feare, really loving her with an immoderate ardency, I durſt not let my veſſell ſtirre from the place where we were, and I continued there that day, and part of the next, being very uncertain what reſolution to take. In the meane time I flattered her as much as poſſibly I could, and I ſpared nothing to mollify her, repreſenting to her whatſoever might conduce to the juſtification of the things I had done, and all the advantages which ſhe might hope for in the poſſeſſion of ſuch a Crown as that of *Armenia*; but I laboured in vain, and her ſpirit being exaſperated more and more by the loſſe of her liberty, ſhe did not heare me but with pain, and did not vouchſafe ſo much as to look upon me.

In fine I was reſolved to carry her into *Armenia*, whether ſhe would or no, where I hoped to ſweeten her, and make her conſent to conditions very advantageous for her, or if I could not overcome her obſtinacy, I ſhould have had the ſatisfaction of being partly revenged for the carryiug away of *Artemiſa*, and of obliging *Alexander* to follow his Siſter, as he had created me the trouble of running after mine.

But to overthrow all this deſign, yeſterday ſhe feigned an indiſpoſition which kept her upon the bed part of the day, and ſeeing me extremely in pain for her health, ſhe ſent me word by one of her Maids, that her malady proceeded from her inability to endure the Sea, and that ſhe ſhould receive a great deale of eaſe, if I would permit her to go

on ſhore, and walk an houre upon the land. This propoſition diſpleaſed me at the very firſt, preſaging what is ſince arrived, and I told her that made it to me, that it was impoſſible for me to grant it, and that I was too fearefull to loſe the good which fortune had beſtowed upon me, to put my ſelf into that hazard : but ſeeing that the Princeſſe perſevered in expreſsing this deſire with a great deale of regret for my refuſall, I attempted to conquer my feare by the love I bare her, and I reſolved to give her this ſatisfaction with the greateſt precaution and ſecurity that could be taken.

We approched then to the ſhore, where the Princeſſe landed with one of her Maids onely, and I likewiſe went aſhore with her, attended by three or foure of my men, leaving the reſt in the veſſell to guard the Princeſſe's Servants, in caſe they ſhould have gone from thence to have procured ſuccour, which was all the danger I could apprehend from them. I cauſed likewiſe two horſes to be led after me, and I put on all my Armes, except my head-piece, which one of my men carried after me, that I might be furniſhed with ſome defence, to encounter what hazard fortune ſhould ſend us.

*Cleopatra* walked a while in the wood neere the ſhore, till ſhe began to be weary and to have a deſire to ſleepe, then ſhe lay down under certain trees which made a very delicate ſhade : my love cauſed in me a reſpect to her, which hindred me from interrupting her repoſe, and out of this conſideration leaving her alone with her maid onely with her, I withdrew my ſelf ſome paces off, that

I might make no noiſe to diſturbe her ſleep. She had continued above halfe an houre in this condition, and I believing ſhe was ſound aſleepe, walked on inſenſibly and imprudently till I was ſo far from her, that the trees deprived me of her ſight; then I began to think upon the fault I had committed, and returned the ſame way to the place where I had left her, where firſt I heard ſome cryes, and ſaw a little after two of my men, which ran after *Cleopatra* and her maid, whom I ſaw amongſt the trees flying before them at a great diſtance off. The men were armed, and all the haſt they could make on foot after perſons whom the deſire of liberty had winged with extraordinary ſpeed, was not capable of overtaking them. I called thoſe who held my horſes upon the ſhore, and leaping upon the firſt, whileſt one of my men, mounted upon the other, I purſued upon full ſpeed the track of the Princeſſe, of whom my men had loſt the ſight. I rode up and down a good ſpace without ſight of her, but at laſt in a pleaſant thicket I diſcovered my faire fugitive, and by meanes of the ſwiftneſſe of my horſe, I was quickly with her. I preſently diſmounted, and having eaſily ſtayd her by reaſon of her wearineſſe in running, I caſt my ſelf at her feet, I embraced her knees, and I did all that I poſſibly could to move her by fair meanes, and by ſubmiſſion; but I laboured in vain, and beholding me with eyes ſparkling with choler: *Cruell man*, ſaid ſhe, *either give me my death or leave me at liberty; thy perſecutions are more cruell to me than death can be, and it is not by the captivity wherein thou retaineſt me, that thou mayeſt ever hope to make me change my inclinations.*

At

At laſt loſing all hope of gaining her by faire wayes, I remounted my horſe, and the man that I brought with me having held her, was about to put her into my armes, whatſoever reſiſtance ſhe could make to hinder him, when my ill fortune brought in a man to her reſcue: I know not who he is, but maugre the bad office he rendred me, I hold him for one of the moſt valiant men of the world. He killed my man in my preſence, and after a very doubtfull combat wherein he had better luck than I, he put me into the condition wherein you found me, and pulled out of hands the fair prey, which fortune had given me for my torment.

See, *Tiridates*, how all things concure to my misfortune; I was not tormented enough by my juſt reſentments, but love muſt needs joyne it ſelf to them, to expoſe me to more ſenſible paines, and it muſt needs be that my Soul muſt be enflamed for my cruell enemies: *Cleopatra* hath appeared before me, *Cleopatra* fell into my hands, but from her ſight, and from her ſurprizall, in ſtead of the revenge which thereby I might have taken one way or the other, if the deſtinies had not been too contrary to me, I have gotten nothing but new ſubjects of reſentment and griefe; and in ſtead of one ſingle paſſion which troubled me, all the paſſions have poſſeſſed my ſoul to torment it with their extremeſt violence. Nevertheleſs hope hath not yet abandoned me, & ſeeing I know the Countrey where *Cleopatra* is, I expect from the care I ſhall take to find her again, when my health will permit, to ſee her again in my power. She is not a perſon obſcure enough to hide her ſelf from my purſuits, and at this

this moment I have perſons in queſt of her, who poſſibly may bring me newes of her before night. If ſhe fall again into my power, I ſhall eſſay as I have done hitherto, by the moſt ſweet and moſt ſubmiſsive wayes, to bow this diſdainfull ſpirit: and if they prove vain, I ſhall remember that ſhe is the Sifter of *Alexander*, and the daughter of *Cleopatra*; and by this remembrance I ſhall poſsibly be freed from part of that, which, it may be, I ſhould ſuffer for another perſon, before I ſearch my remedies, and endeavour my repoſe by the meanes my fortune hath given me.

---

*Hymen's*

# HYMEN'S *Præludia*: OR, LOVE'S Maſter-piece.

## PART V. LIB. III.

### ARGUMENT.

Tiridates *diſlikes* Artaxus's *intentions, but he continues reſolute.* Tiridates *walking out meets with* Marcellus, *and brings him to his houſe, where* Marcellus *relates his Story; He briefly traces the moſt eminent paſſages between himſelf and the Princeſſe* Julia. *Her inconſtancy cauſes his jealouſy, which ſhe heightens by heaping her favours upon* Druſus. Cleopatra's *conſtancy to* Coriolanus *notwithſtanding* Auguſtus *his authority.* Julia *at a ſolemne ſacrifice preferres* Druſus *before* Marcellus, *which begets a Combat between them, wherein they are both wounded.* Auguſtus *reproves* Julia's *levity, and commands her to caſhire* Druſus, *which ſhe does, and is reconciled to* Marcellus.

The

THe King of *Armenia* left ſpeaking, and *Tiridates*, who being vertuouſly inclined did not hearken unto him without repugnance, and who, neither by the memory of the acquaintance they had had together, nor the obligation he had to his family for the refuge he had ſome time found there, could vanquiſh the averſion he had from cruelty and injuſtice, found not himſelf capable of flattering him, or approving either his actions paſſed, or his deſign for the future. *Sir*, ſaid he to him, *I do not find it ſtrange that the Gods have not hitherto granted to your deſignes all the ſucceſſe you propoſed to your ſelfe; and by the obſtacles, which by wayes altogether extraordinary, they have oppoſed to the cruell intentions which you had both againſt* Alexander *and the Princeſſe* Cleopatra, *you may take notice of the injuſtice of them. Neither was* Alexander *a perſon worthy to dye upon a Scaffold for the crime of another, which poſſibly he deteſted as much as you; neither is* Cleopatra *a Princeſſe againſt whom the horrid reſolutions wherewith you are armed can be excuſed. I do not wonder that you were captivated by her divine beauties, and they are capable without doubt of a more extraordinary performance; but I am ſurprized at this, that they have not abſolutely produced in you all that might be expected from their powers, and that they have yet left you ſome deſire of ſeeking your ſatisfaction of her otherwiſe than by love, by ſubmiſſion, and by your ſervices. I will ſay more to you Sir, that you have not undertaken a ſlight enterpriſe, ſeeing you have reſolved either by revenge, or by love to render your ſelf Maſter by force, of the liberty of* Cleopatra,

and

*and she is not a person so meanely supported in the world, but that you will have the chiefe powers of the earth to contend with,* Augustus, *who without doubt will protect her, comes within a few dayes to* Alexandria, *as it hath been reported to you, and with him persons who interesse themselves in the fortune of* Cleopatra *as in their owne, so powerfull and considerable, that though you should have brought with you all the forces of* Armenia, *you could not with any probability expect any good successe.*

*Artaxus* shook his head at this discourse, and expressing to *Tiridates* by this action, how uncapable he was to make any impression upon his spirit: *I was very doubtfull,* said he, *at my first knowing of your inclinations, that I should have scruples in you to contend with & considering that you are the brother of a King, who for the least Maxime of state would shed the blood of the whole* Universe, *I find you very religious, and circumspect: but however it be, I cannot repent my self of what I would have done in revenge of my father, and if I had let passe his death without any marke of my resentment, I should believe I did more justly merit the blame which persons of your humour lay upon some effects of severity; As for what concernes my love, the difficulty which you represent to me is not capable of driving me off from it, and though the whole* Universe *should joyne with the authority of* Augustus, *in undertaking the defence of* Cleopatra, *I find my self hardy enough, and possibly sufficiently strong to execute part of what I have resolved. If* Alexander, *being alone and a prisoner, could carry away my Sister out of my capitall City, I may possibly be able in a condition very different from his to render him the same*

*dis-*

*diſpleaſure, and if I do but get* Cleopatra *into* Armenia, *I defy thoſe powers wherewith you threaten me, to oppoſe themſelves to my entire ſatisfaction.*

*I am very ſorry,* replyed *Tiridates* coldly, *that you have diſcovered your intention to me, and not being able, without offending vertue, and the amitie I have promiſed to thoſe perſons of the World that are moſt intereſſed in it, to offer you in this occaſion that ſervice which without doubt I ſhould render you in ſome other; I could wiſh with all my heart that you had intruſted your ſecret to any body rather than to me.*

The King of *Armenia* was troubled at theſe words, and looking upon *Tiridates* with an action that expreſſed ſome diſcontent: *I thought I had ſpoken to my friend,* ſaid he, *when I declared to you the moſt ſecret thoughts of my heart, and in ſtead of the diſcourſe you have made me, I did probably expect from you all ſort of aſſiſtance. You ſhall receive it without doubt,* replyed *Tiridates, in all the care that may be taken for your health, and the offers which you may expect of a vertuous friend in the retreat you have taken here: But in the deſignes which you ſhall have againſt* Cleopatra *and her relations, I ſhall not be favourable unto you. I ſhall endeavour,* anſwered the *Armenian* all netled, *to paſſe by your aſſiſtance, and with the aid of the God of love, and vengeance, whom onely I will invoke, I ſhall poſſibly performe my ſelf part of what I have reſolved, without the help of any but thoſe that belong to me, without being obliged to any perſon.*

*Tiridates* being unwilling to diſpleaſe him in his

OWN

own houſe, as he might have done without deſign, if they had enlarged themſelves farther in this converſation, changed his diſcourſe, and after he had repreſented unto him that by reaſon of the long narration he had made he was in a condition that required repoſe, he took leave of him, and went out of his chamber. The reall amity which in regard of his extraordinary merit he had in ſo ſhort a time vowed to the King of *Mauritania*, and the repugnance which he naturally had againſt bad actions, made him look upon the deſignes of *Artaxus* with horrour and deteſtation, and following the motions of his vertue above all other conſiderations, he made no doubt which part he was to take, but reſolved to ſerve *Coriolanus* againſt the intentions of the *Armenian*, as far as he could without infringing the lawes of hoſpitality, and without expoſing a Prince which was retired into his houſe, and with whom he had ſome time found refuge, to ſome diſpleaſure which might be imputed to him. He continued ſome time alone, uncertain what reſolution he ſhould take, whether to contrive the ſafety of *Cleopatra* as much as he could poſsible, without advertiſing *Coriolanus* of it, and without letting him know his enemy, or to declare the truth to that Prince, after he had made him paſs his word that *Artaxus* ſhould not be offended, and that he would content himſelf to oppoſe the deſignes which he might have againſt his beloved Princeſs, without doing him any diſpleaſure in his perſon, in a place wherein he could not receive it, but that *Tiridates* muſt be intereſſed therein: He doubted not but that the ſon of *Juba*, being the moſt moderate

rate of men, would have this conſideration for him, and upon this thought he diſpoſed himſelf at laſt to conceale nothing from him, and praiſed the Gods for the occaſion which poſsibly he had found of rendring him one of the moſt important ſervices that he could receive from his friends.

Beſides the intereſts of *Coriolanus*, he thought upon *Britomarus*, whom he ſaw under the ſame roof with *Artaxus*, of whoſe reſentments againſt that cruell King he could not be ignorant, by reaſon of the relation he had made of the beginnings of his life. The ſo unexpected encounter of thoſe two men put him in ſome care, and in regard of the knowledge he had of the fierce and impatient humour of *Britomarus*, he feared leſt he ſhould quarrell with the *Armenian*, from whom he had ſometime received a ſenſible diſpleaſure. In relation to this feare he reſolved to conceale from him the knowledge he had of the King of *Armenia* as much as he could poſſible, till he had taken order with *Coriolanus*, for what might happen upon this encounter, not ſeeing otherwiſe any neceſſity of diſcovering to him things wherein he had no intereſt.

After he had employed ſome time in taking theſe reſolutions, he began to be troubled at the long walk of *Coriolanus*, though he was not ignorant, by what he experimented every day himſelf, in what manner amorous thoughts did cauſe the houres to paſſe away inſenſibly in muſing and ſolitude: he ſaw the greateſt part of the day was paſt, and the Prince had taken very little nouriſhment.

*Emilius*, by reaſon of his Maſters long ſtay, be-

ginning to feare some accident was befallen him, was gone out to seek him, and *Tiridates* seeing at length that the night approched without hearing any newes of him, went out of the house, and walked towards the wood. He had hardly gone a few furlongs, but he saw coming straight towards him a *Cavalier* armed at all points except his *Casque*, which he carried in one of his hands: he went very softly, and with a countenance which expressed either a great sadnesse, or a profound musing. As he approched, *Tiridates* who saw his face all uncovered, thought he knew him, and when he was neer enough to discerne all the lineaments of his face, by calling to mind all the *Ideas* of them, he knew him to be the Prince *Marcellus*, whom he had seen at *Rome*, and with whom he had contracted a particular amity. *Tiridates* was astonished to see *Marcellus* the darling of the Emperour, and of all the Empire, in such an equipage; and doubting, for that reason, of that which his eyes would perswade him to, he stept some paces back with an action which sufficiently testified his surprize; afterwards beginning to speak: *O Gods*, said he, *is it possible that I see the Prince* Marcellus? *Marcellus*, who through the preoccupation of his spirit, and the little likelihood there was of meeting *Tiridates* in that place, and in that condition, had without doubt passed by without knowing of him, stayed himself at his exclamation, and at the name of *Marcellus* which he heard him pronounce; and *Tiridates* banishing the rest of his incertitude, approched to him and embraced him on horseback as he was: *Ah! it is your self without doubt*, continued he, *and it*

*is permitted to the unfortunate* Tiridates, *to ſee in his ſolitude one of the perſons of the world, whom his vertue hath placed ſo high in his eſteem.* By theſe words, and the action of *Tiridates*, *Marcellus* diſſipating all his muſing, and caſting his eyes upon the face of the Prince which embraced him, with whom he had lived familiarly at *Rome*, and to whom he had given all the reſpect which was due to his illuſtrious birth and rare qualities, knew him very readily, and not being willing to receive his careſſes with incivility, he leaped from his horſe to the ground, and embraced him with a ſweetneſs full of grace and majeſty, which was very naturall to him: "It is certain, *ſaid he to him, rendring the civilities* "*he had received from him*, that you ſee the unfor- "tunate *Marcellus*; but my aſtoniſhment is no leſs "than yours to meet you alone, and on foot in a "place where I never ſhould have imagined to have "found you. This is not the firſt day, *replyed Tiri-* "*dates*, that you have ſeen me ſeek out ſolitudes, "and that you have accuſed me for avoyding the "ſociety of men in a place where I might have had "that of the chiefeſt perſons of the world: but "for you, whom I have ſeen, and whom I know to "be ſtill the darling, and hope of *Rome*, you which "paſs your life in the greateſt pleaſures, and in "the higheſt ſplendour of the Empire, it is very "ſtrange to meet you in a condition ſo different "from that wherein all the earth were accuſtomed "to behold you. *Marcellus* during this diſcourſe kept his eyes fixed upon the ground, and afterwards looking up upon *Tiridates* with a ſigh drawn from the very bottom of his heart: "*Tiridates*,

"*said he to him*, the condition of men is uncertain, "and our fortune is so subject to revolutions, that "very often those who in other mens imagination "pass for the most happy, are exposed to the grea-"test misfortunes: Ah *Marcellus!* replyed *Tiridates*, "can it be possible that your fortune should "have received any change, and can you by any "accident have lost the amity of *Augustus?* No, "*answered Marcellus*, I have not observed any di-"minution in the affection of *Cæsar* towards me, "it is in a more sensible part that my heart is "wounded, & its the infidelity of the persons whom "I loved most that is the cause of my misfortune. "You amaze me, *replyed Tiridates*, and afflict me "both at once, but I will enquire no further of it "in a place wherein your stay is incommodious for "you; and I will learn what you please of you con-"cerning it, in an house which is not above an hun-"dred paces hence, wherein I have taken my re-"treat for some time; it is not worthy of you, and "I should make some difficulty to offer it you, if I "did not know, that in your discontent you will "possibly find there one of the greatest consolati-"ons that you can receive.

At these words *Marcellus* looking upon *Tiridates* more attentively than he had done before; *I doubt not*, said he, *but from such company as yours a man may hope for much consolation, and I will accept for this night the retreat you offer me, not so much to ease my self after the great paines I have undergone this day, as to passe some hours of conversation with a Prince, whom I have alwayes well esteemed, and whom I have known exceeding worthy of the esteem of*

*the*

*the Whole world. Tiridates* would not any further explain to *Marcellus* the conſolation which he promiſed him, and which he hoped would be very great in his meeting with *Coriolanus*, expecting to ſurprize him agreeably by the view of that Prince, whom he knew to be as dear to him as himſelf, but onely having modeſtly defended himſelf from his obliging diſcourſe, he cauſed him to take the way to his houſe, and conducted him into *Coriolanus* his chamber, where they met neither the Prince nor his Eſquire, who was not returned ſince he went in the queſt of his Maſter.

*Marcellus* was preſently diſarmed by *Tiridates* his ſervants, and at the earneſt intreaty of that Prince having laid himſelf upon a bed to reſt himſelf a little, the Prince of *Parthia* left him in this appearance of repoſe for ſome moments, which he deſired to employ in the care which he took of his illuſtrious gueſts. The greateſt thing that troubled him at that time was the long ſtay of *Coriolanus*, for which he was in very great diſquiet: the darkneſſe began already to cover the earth, and he had heard no newes either of him or his Eſquire, and ſcarcely doubting any longer but that ſome accident was befallen him, he had a mind to goe in ſearch of him every way, if the feare of alarming *Marcellus*, and of committing an incivility againſt that Prince, to whom, out of an intention to ſurprize him with pleaſure, he would ſay nothing of *Coriolanus*, had not retained him in an impatience which made him ſuffer very much. Not being able handſomely to quit gueſts of ſuch importance as his were, he retained no more of his ſervants than he needs muſt, and ſent all the reſt in

the ſearch of the King of *Mauritania*. After he had employed an houre in this and other buſineſſes, during which time the inquietudes which he ſuffered for that Prince, augmented more and more, he returned into the chamber where he had left *Marcellus*, whom he found walking by the light of tapers which they had brought him: Almoſt at the ſame time they ſerved in ſupper, and the two Princes having taking a repaſt together, during which their ſadneſſe might eaſily be perceived by their converſation, they retired themſelves into a withdrawing roome, where being alone, they began a diſcourſe ſomewhat more free than before.

*Marcellus* had an imperfect knowledge of part of the adventures of *Tiridates*, and did not wonder to ſee him in the ſame humour wherein he had been at *Rome* during all the ſtay he made there; but *Tiridates* comprehended nothing concerning the ſolitude and ſadneſſe of *Marcellus*, and judging himſelf familiar enough with him to enquire any thing of him: *If the affliction which appeares in you*, ſaid he to him, *did not really redouble mine, I ſhould have retention enough to conceal from you a curioſity which poſſibly you will diſapprove; but ſeeing I cannot behold you in the grief which you expreſſe by divers marks, without intereſſing my ſelf very much in it, & that the condition wherein I have met you ſeemes to me very diſproportionable to the reſt of your life, you will pardon me if I deſire of that friendſhip wherewith you have favoured me at* Rome, *the cauſe of ſuch a change: I hope it from your goodneſſe, if you have not ſome reaſon to conceale it, and if for any conſideration you are obliged ſo to do, I beſeech you likewiſe with the*

*ſame*

*ſame freedome not to content a curioſity which deſires not to be ſatisfied with the leaſt of your diſpleaſures. I would,* replyed Marcellus, *you would deſire ſomething of me, whereby I might better teſtifie the confidence I have in you, than by the relation of thoſe things which have appeared too publickly to be concealed, and you ſhould ſee,* Tiridates, *by that better than by what you deſire, how much I am ſenſible of the affection of a Prince of your birth and vertue: but expecting an opportunity of acknowledging it by ſome more important effect of mine, I will inform you of that which you deſire to know of me, and will diſcover unto you the cauſe of my griefes, together with the infidelity of thoſe perſons whom I have moſt dearly loved, and whom I cannot yet hate, as perfidious as they are, what violence ſoever I have endeavoured to offer to my inclinations upon that account. You may poſſibly,* anſwered Tiridates, *have found infidelity in ſome perſon whom you have loved: but amongſt thoſe which have been the deareſt to you, the King of* Mauritania, *who without doubt hath held one of the moſt eminent ranks in your friendſhip, hath preſerved his to you ſo inviolably, that all humane conſiderations would not be capable to alter it in the leaſt. Ah* Tiriridates, cryed Marcellus, *how are you abuſed? 'Tis* Coriolanus, *onely* Coriolanus *who hath deceived me, and I finde in the other perſon of whom I complain, ſo much the leſſe deceit than in* Coriolanus, *becauſe I leſſe confided in her, and though I was prepoſſeſſed with a paſſion for her, which always blinded me, yet from the firſt proofs of her inconſtancy I had cauſe to diſoblige my ſelf from her eternally. On the other ſide,* Coriolanus *(let me ſay ſo much in reproch of that ungrateful man) had ſo great*

*great obligations to me, that I cannot comprehend how by baſe conſiderations they could be ſo eaſily defaced out of the minde of a Prince, or of a man born onely of a noble blood.*

*Tiridates* could not forbeare interrupting *Marcellus* with precipitation : *Marcellus*, ſaid he to him, *you make me a diſcourſe wherein I can comprehend nothing, and I will engage my life, and any thing yet more precious, for the innocence of* Coriolanus. *He hath without doubt been treacherouſly traduced to you, rather than you betrayed by him; and beſides the knowledge I have received not long ſince of his admirable vertue, by what I know of the particularities of his life, I am very certain not only that he hath not forgotten your good offices ; but that in all his affaires, he hath conſerved his freindſhip ſo entirely yours, that he hath not been more faithfull to* Cleopatra *than to your ſelf. You ſpeak truth now*, replyed Marcellus, *and I know well that* Coriolanus, *whoſe juſtification you undertake upon an imperfect knowledge, hath been no more faithfull to his Miſtreſſe, than to his friend. I doe not wonder that the complaint I have made you of him hath ſurprized you, after what hath been evident to all the Romans concerning our friendſhip : but when I ſhall have related to you that which you deſire to know concerning my life, you will without doubt abandon the part of this ungratefull man, and confeſſe with me that all the complaints I can make of him are inferiour to his perfidiouſneſſe.*

*Tiridates* was full of confuſion and aſtoniſhment at this diſcourſe, and becauſe of the change he underſtood, changing the deſign he had for the interview of theſe two Princes, before he engaged himſelf

himself in *Marcellus* his relation, he called one of his men, and gave him order that if *Coriolanus* did return, he should come and give him notice of it before he entred into the chamber. After this precaution, which he judged necessary by reason of the things he had heard, he placed himself again by *Marcellus*, who without any further intreaty began his discourse thus.

## *The History of* Marcellus *and* Julia.

Before I come to the relation of the injury which I have received from the ungratefull Prince whom you defend, it is necessary that I recount to you some other things that preceded it, and which make on without doubt a great part of my displeasures. You know since I was engaged in the service of the Princess *Julia*, the intention the Emperour hath alwayes had to ally me to him by the marriage of his daughter neerer than I am by birth; and you have without doubt heard some discourse at *Rome*, during the stay you made there, of the violence, which in favour of *Coriolanus*, I offered to my former inclinations, which had given me to *Cleopatra*. *I know*, interrupted *Tiridates*, *a great deale more; I am not ignorant of any thing touching the beginnings of your life, your love to* Cleopatra, *the generous effects of your friendship towards* Coriolanus, *all the good offices you have rendred him since in the whole course of his love, and the businesse which his passion caused him. I have understood the displeasures you resented for the testimonies of affection which* Julia *bestowed upon* Coriolanus,

Coriolanus, *your reconciliation with that Princeſſe, and in fine, all the things wherein you could have any intereſt, till the time that* Coriolanus *parted from* Rome *to paſſe into* Africa *to recover his Kingdome. I know not,* replyed *Marcellus, of whom you could learn all this; but by this knowledge which you have of the firſt adventures of my life, I ſhall be much eaſed in the diſcourſe which I have to make unto you, and I ſhall truly recount unto you the latter, though I cannot call them to minde without diſpleaſure, nor ſpeake of them without confuſion.*

Heaven without doubt beheld me with an angry aſpect, when it deſtined me to the ſervice of *Julia*; and to the reaſons which I have to hate *Coriolanus*, I ought to adde this, that for the love of him onely, and not out of the reſpect I owe to the will of *Cæſar*, I engaged my ſelf in a ſervitude which makes up all the misfortune of my life. It is not but that *Julia*, as you know, is of ſuch a compoſure, that if inconſtancy and artifice did not ſpoil what there is in her of good and amiable, the moſt accompliſhed perſon of the world might find uncommon felicities in the teſtimonies of her affection. Her beauty (as you can witneſs) hardly gives precedency to the ſupremeſt beauties of the earth, and her ſpirit is endued with charms, againſt which it is difficult to defend ones ſelf, when ſhe will employ them with their powers entire. A taking ſweetneſs, and an attractive grace accompany all her actions, & all her diſcourſes; and with her looks, when ſhe pleaſeth to joyn to what ſhe hath received from nature, that which art hath taught her for their conduct, ſhe goes

goes to the bottom of an heart to ſearch out thoſe places which are moſt fortified againſt the empire that ſhe will eſtabliſh. Her humour is the moſt pleaſant, the moſt agreeable, and the fulleſt of divertiſement in the world, if her mind be not troubled with ſome paſſion; and ſhe hath naturally an eloquence ſo facile and ſo fluent, that there are few perſons which can expreſs their conceptions in better terms, and with more facility; briefly, ſhe is entirely ſuch, that it is impoſſible to defend ones ſelf from her ſnares, when ſhe layes them with deſign, and I have experimented it but too much for my repoſe, which ſhe hath ſo often troubled, and now utterly ruined by the laſt effects of her inconſtancy.

I will not ſpeak to you, ſeeing you know it already, of the diſpleaſures ſhe made me ſenſible of by the teſtimonies of her affection to *Coriolanus*; After the departure of this Prince to the wars of the *Aſturias*, we reconciled our ſelves, and though I could not give abſolute credit to the things which *Julia* alledged to me for her juſtification, yet my inclinations ſpake for her, and did ſo combat with the appearances to deceive me, that at laſt I perſwaded my ſelf to part of that which ſhe deſired, and believed poſſibly againſt reaſon, that I was really beloved by her. I paſſed ſome time in thoſe ſweets which ſhe can make one taſt, when ſhe hath the intention to do it, but it was not without being very often croſſed with diſpleaſures which partly counterbalanced them; and though naturally I am not jealous, if my jealouſy hath not a very rationall foundation, this Princeſs gave me ſo often occaſion

to fall into that importunate paſſion, that except I had been blind and inſenſible, I could not paſſe my life in tranquillity.

The Court of *Auguſtus* was compoſed of a great number of young Princes (you were of the number at that time, and you departed thence, as I think, a few dayes before the Son of *Juba* returned from the *Aſturias*) and beſides the moſt eminent amongſt the Romans, born of thoſe illuſtrious families who with ſo much valour have endeavoured to advance the grandeur of the Empire; divers Sonnes of Kings, and divers Kings themſelves either tributaries or allies of *Rome*, made their abode there with *Auguſtus*. There were thoſe who were rarely accompliſhed both amongſt the Romans, and amongſt the ſtrangers, and amongſt them it was that *Julia* found matter for her inconſtancy. Becauſe of the rank ſhe held, and the knowledge they had of the deſign of *Auguſtus* in my favour, few perſons durſt expreſſe their particular deſignes, and thoſe which by her beauty, & by the reſt of her charmes ſhe had rendred really her ſlaves, contented themſelves, to render her ſuch ſubmiſſive devoirs, that they hardly differed from adoration: but this Princeſſe being cleare-ſighted in all things, and particularly in thoſe which ſerved to the expreſſion of amorous reſentments, eaſily diſcerned them through the veile of reſpect and ſubmiſion; and whereas another perſon born with a courage proportionable to her birth would have received this knowledge with anger and diſdain, *Julia* being of a quite contrary humour, liked well of all thoſe whom ſhe cou'd onely ſuſpect of ſome motion of affection, ſhe receiv-

ed

ed them with an obliging countenance, ſhe favoured them in divers occurrences more than they could have hoped, and giving them all manner of occaſions to perſevere in the reſentments they had for her, ſhe carefully avoided all thoſe that might give them any repulſe.

Oftentimes ſhe concealed her ſelf from me in what might afflict me; but ſometimes ſhe could not ſo well diſguiſe her ſelf, but that I took notice of ſome part of the truth: when I made my complaints to her of it, ſometimes ſhe took the paines to comfort me and give me ſatisfaction, and ſometimes ſerving her ſelf of the Empire ſhe had over me, ſhe ſharply reprehended the authority I ſeemed to take over her actions, and reduced me into a condition of diſavowing all my complaints, and of asking pardon of her for the liberty my paſsion made me take.

I ſpeake unto you of theſe paſſages very ſuccinctly, becauſe I believe they are the ſame that have been related to you, & that in theſe occurrences there hapned no memorable event: but I will more enlarge my ſelf upon thoſe which you are ignorant of, and wherein more important things befell me.

I lived in this faſhion both during *Coriolanus* his ſtay in the *Aſturias*, and that he made at *Rome*, before his departure into *Africa*: but for the latter time, he knowes well himſelf, as ungratefull and forgetfull as he is of it, that I ſpent it entirely in his intereſts, and that I was ſo employed in his quarrells both with *Tiberius*, and *Ceſar* himſelf, that I could hardly beſtow a moment upon my own affaires. Certain it is, that during all that trouble

I had hardly any thought but for his repoſe, wherein I intereſſed all the perſons with whom I could have any credit, and for which I often put my ſelf in danger of drawing upon me the diſgrace and choler of *Auguſtus*.

*Coriolanus* after he had extremely wounded *Tiberius*, departed from *Rome* as you have heard, and I ſtay'd there with a very ſenſible regret for his abſence, and the bad condition of his affaires. I will not tell you all that I acted with *Cæſar* to appeaſe him, all the quarrells I had with *Tiberius* his party, and with the Empreſſe her ſelf, who would have armed heaven and earth to revenge her ſon; and I will onely relate unto you the progreſſe of my love with *Julia* and the laſt accidents whereby you ſee, me reduced into the ſad condition wherein you met me. Whatſoever diſpleaſure I received by theſe effects of the inconſtant humour of *Julia*, whereof I have briefly ſpoken, and by the good uſage ſhe ſhewed to thoſe perſons whom ſhe obſerved to beare her affection, I found ſome conſolation in the beliefe I had, that, as kind, and as ſweet as ſhe was to others, ſhe was yet more affectionate to me, and maugre the motions of a wavering ſpirit, which they could not retain, ſhe would return to me entirely, preferring me before all thoſe who could have any thought for her. This was that which made me ſupport all things with patience, and without doubt I ſhould have done ſo ſtill for divers conſiderations, if by the ſequel of her actions I had not loſt part of that opinion, and had not ſeen my ſelf expoſed to greater diſpleaſures than all thoſe I had reſented.

Amongſt

Amongſt thoſe who concurred to trouble my repoſe. *Caius Druſus* the ſon of *Livia*, and brother of *Tiberius*, was he who croſſed me more than I could be by any perſon, who could counterbalance my credit both in *Rome*, and in the mind of *Ceſar*, but the ſonne of the Empreſſe, who had power enough over the ſpirit of her husband, to reſtraine in part the advantageous inclinations he had toward me: and I believe alſo (though the charmes of *Julia* were great enough to obtaine more difficult conqueſts) that it was at the ſollicitation of *Livia*, that *Druſus* embarked himſelf in the love of *Julia*. This ambitious Mother deſiring to conferre upon her own children, what which in the judgement of all the *Romans*, *Auguſtus* deſtined for me, and by all wayes to conſerve to her ſelf the authority ſhe had acquired, had done before all that was poſſible for her to engage *Tiberius* in the reſearch of *Ceſar's* daughter, but not being able by all her endeavours to diſentangle him from the love he bare to *Cleopatra*, ſhe had turned her thoughts to *Druſus*, who was younger than his brother onely by one yeare, and had repreſented unto him with ſucceſſe, that by the mariage of *Julia* he might pretend to the Empire, and fruſtrate the hopes of *Marcellus*, who had the greateſt pretentions to it. *Druſus* being of an age, and in a condition to receive ſuch impreſſions, made no reſiſtance to his mothers will, and though in the poſſeſſion of *Julia* he had not taken notice of the advantages which were found in *Ceſar's* daughter, ſhe was amiable enough of her perſon onely, to poſſeſſe him really with love without any other intereſt, and it was without pain

pain that he disposed his inclinations to it.

What resentment soever the concurrence of *Drusus* may have given me against him, I must always confesse that he possesses all manner of great qualities; he is complet in body, and mind; and not yielding to *Tiberius* in valour and greatnesse of courage, he surpasses him without doubt in freedome, in sweetnesse, & all manner of dispositions to vertue. I will say no more to you of him, you have seen him and been acquainted with him, and without doubt you have heard at *Rome*, that in the war of *Dalmatia*, whither he went with his brother without any command, and in divers other expeditions, where when he was hardly passed his infancy he bare armes, he had already acquired a very great reputation, and given marvailous hopes of his valour and prudence. The knowledge whereof having puffed up his courage, he believed he might dispute *Julia* with me, although the Emperour had destined her for me, and that by a long acquaintance I ought to have gained her affections already: and grounding part of his hope upon the judgement he might have made of her inconstancy, he made no doubt to engage himself in her service. However he was not affraid to disoblige me after the declaration I had made against all his relations in favour of *Coriolanus*, and in all the quarrells which that Prince had with *Tiberius*, having embraced his interests as mine own, no one ought to think it strange if all the house of *Livia* bare me but little affection, and that my consideration, which possibly would have produced that effect in another, did not impede the brother of

*Tibe-*

*Tiberius* in a deſigne of that importance, yet knowing that the intentions of the Emperour were wholly declared for me, he durſt not oppoſe them openly; and he endeavoured with ſecrecy and diſcretion to gaine the affections of *Julia*, waiting opportunities to make his deſign known, when by the conduct and authority of *Livia* he ſhould ſee himſelf in a condition to diſcover it. Being of ſo high a rank as he was, he had the liberty to ſee the Princeſſe every day, and all perſons of his condition did ſo frequently render her their viſits, that I could not make ſtrange of his. Being intereſſed and having a diſtruſt of the mind of *Julia*, I ſuſpected him as well as divers others, and made very frequent complaints of him to the Princeſs, as I did of other perſons to whom according to my opinion ſhe was too good; but for a long time I had no particular ſuſpition of him: at leaſt I did not believe a great while that he was more gracious with *Julia* than the other Princes who viſited her, and I had poſſibly continued years in this belief, if I had not been preſented with an occaſion to loſe it when I leaſt expected.

I was one day with the Princeſs, and I had ſpent an hour in converſation with her, without any company but two or three of her maids, which were at the other end of her cloſet, when ſhe riſing from me to go to a window which looked into the Court, a letter fell from under her garments at my feet without her perceiving of it: I took it up preſently with an intention to give it her, but at the ſame inſtant the ſuſpicion which for ſome while before ſeldome quitted me, made me change my thought,

and seeing that the Princess looking into the Court through the glass, had her back turned towards me, I had a mind to take this time to satisfie my curiosity in part, and without further consulting with the respect I owed to *Julia*, opening the paper with an hand which by its trembling discovered to me part of the truth, I began to read these words.

## *To the Princesse* Julia.

*I shall conceal without regret my passion from all the world, since it is your will that it should not be known but onely to your self, and though I could not without some constraint render this deference to the fortune of another, yet through that I owe to your command, all things are easie: my heart which declares it self to you more perfectly than my mouth could do, hath not the same expressions for other persons, and you alone with facility may behold the secret of a soul which you entirely possesse: It is fortune enough for me that you permit my love without repugnance, and I hope from time and your goodnesse dispositions more entire.*

I had not time to make an end of reading this Letter, and I was about this part of it, when *Julia* turning towards me surprized me in this employment. *What do you read, Marcellus?* said she to me: But I was so surprized and astonished at this cruell testimony of my misfortune, that she asked me this question twice before I was in a condition to shape her an answer: *I would know*, continues she, *what it is that you read with so much attention*; and with these words she came neerer to me. I folded

ded up the Letter with a deſigne to make an end of reading it; but I could not give her any anſwer but by looks enflamed with a juſt indignation, and by the alterations of my countenance, which ſufficiently diſcovered to her the troubles of my mind. Nevertheleſs ſhe perſiſted in her curioſity, and after ſhe had preſſed me divers times to ſhew her the paper which I had hid: *Madam*, ſaid I to her at laſt, making a ſtrong attempt to diſſemble ſome part of my grief, *it is a thing of ſo little importance that it is not worth the pains you take to inform your ſelf of it.* I ſpake theſe words with ſo ſad a countenance, that ſhe was in ſome ſort troubled at it, and marking how I was changed within a few moments, if ſhe did not divine the reall cauſe, ſhe imagined at leaſt that it was ſome great matter which cauſed this alteration. "I do not like it, "*replyed ſhe*, that you ſhould keep any thing ſecret "from me, and if you do any longer reſiſt the de- "ſire I have to ſee that which you conceal from "me, you will raiſe ſuſpitions in me, wherein poſ- "ſibly neither you nor I ſhall find our ſatisfacti- "on.

I could no longer contain the deſpite which tormented me, and preſenting her the fatall paper wherein the marks of her inconſtancy were ſo deep engraven: "Yes Madam, *ſaid I to her*, you ſhall "ſee it, and it is juſt that I ſhould render that to "you which is your own, and to which I no way "pretend. Behold, *continued I, whileſt ſhe received* "*her letter with much confuſion*, behold the dear "marks of my fortune which I remit into your "hands, and the fair effects of that firm affection

" which you had promiſed to *Marcellus*, and where-
" upon the abuſed *Marcellus* had eſtabliſhed all his
" glory, and all the felicity of his life.

*Julia* was in ſuch a confuſion, that whatſoever aſſurance ſhe naturally had, for a long time ſhe was not in a condition to reply, and I was ſo tranſported, that fearing to tranſgreſs the bounds of the reſpect I owed her, if I purſued my reſentment in my diſcourſe, I kept ſilence with a conſtancy wherein my violent paſſion was genuinely repreſented. *Julia*, who hath a ſpirit of another temper than mine, did much ſooner compoſe her ſelf than I, and beholding me with eyes expreſſing ſome choler and diſdain: *I take it ill*, ſaid ſhe to me, *that you take the liberty to read my letters without my permiſſion: all the intereſt you take in them can not acquit you of the reſpect you owe me, and if you your ſelf have not found in your indiſcretion part of the puniſhment which you deſerve, I ſhall make you ſenſible of my reſentments in ſuch a manner as ſhall make you learne to be more reſerved with me.*

I was too well fortified by my conſcience, and by the juſtice of what I could reproach *Julia* with, to feare her choler, as I ſhould have done upon another occaſion wherein ſhe had been more reaſonable, and beholding her with a viſage which ordinarily ſhewes the difference between thoſe which are innocent, and thoſe which are culpable: " I owe
" you, *replyed I*, much more reſpect than love, and
" if nothing can diſpenſe with my reſpect, my love
" finds in the cruell cheats you have put upon me,
" reaſons great enough to withdraw it ſelf from
" you for ever. I ſhall do what I can poſſible not to

" trouble

" trouble his felicity any more who acknowledgeth " himself so redeuable to your goodness, and what " glory soever I find in serving you, I should be the " basest of men, if I did not endeavour to recover " out of your power an heart so ungratefully and " unworthily abandoned. You will do me a plea- " sure, *briskly answered Julia*, and I suffer too much " much by your humour to be sorry for the loss of " a thing which makes me subject to tyranny. Ah " Madam, *replyed I*, you have no cause to com- " plain, and whatsoever usage I have received from " you, I should be very sorry that you could re- " proch me with any action wherein I have not to- " gether with the Princess *Julia*, to whom I have " given my soul, considered the daughter of *Cæsar* " to whom I owe all. If I have committed any " fault of this nature, the Gods are my witnesses " that it is neither in my knowledge, nor according " to my intention, and to hinder me from falling " into it, though I cannot give you an exact ac- " count of my abilities, I will do whatsoever I can " possible to give you the satisfaction you desire. Having spoken these words I went from her, and departed out of her chamber in the saddest condition that ever I was in in my life.

In effect this visible proof of her inconstancy did so nettle me, that I could hardly be more moved by the most cruell accidents that could happen to me, and when I was retired into a place where I might disgest my adventure, I found in it so much cause of grief, that I could hardly receive any consolation. *Ah*, said I, *I should be a meer foole, I should be blinder than ever yet I have been, if I could*

*any longer be ignorant of the infidelity of* Julia, *and the trickes she hath put upon me heretofore, now appeare in their true shape. Her love to* Coriolanus, *which she would have passe but for a fiction was but too reall, and if that Prince had not disdained the affections of this unfaithfull creature, neither the memory of all my services nor the authority of* Cæsar *had been capable of conserving* Julia *for me. The demonstrations of amity she hath since made to so many persons and which she would artificially make to passe with me for effects of civility and gallantry are the reall effects of her lightnesse; and if my passion had left me any remainder of common sense onely, I could not have been mistaken. Return then to thy self,* Marcellus, *out of this profound inadvertisse which hath unmann'd thee, remember thy self that thou art not born to be despised, and that thou art fit for somthing better, and more great, than to be the eternall object of the inconstancies of* Julia. *The interest which may joyne with her beauty to fix thee to her service, is not capable to engage a noble soul; and though in not being the Son in law of* Cæsar *thou wilt lose the hopes he hath given thee, thou art born to a dignity sufficiently eminent, and thou maist possibly mount up to a very sublime degree, if thou dost not degenerate from the vertue of thy ancestors nor disgrace the beginnings of thy life. Abandon then this ungratefull creature, which abandons thee every day by a lightnesse without example; and consider that this base sufferance to which she hath subjected thee by her artifices, is unworthy of thy courage. All those for whom she now withdrawes from thee the affections she had given thee, are, it may be, both by birth and quality of person inferiour to thee, and*

*by*

*by the preference ſhe gives them above thee, ſhe poſſibly wrongs her ſelf as much as ſhe can offend thee. Leave her then in this condition wherein without doubt ſhe will quickly finde cauſe to repent: and though after ſome reflection, which will make her come to her ſelfe again, ſhe would recall thee by her ordinary artifices; confirme thy ſelfe in thy juſt reſentments, and let her know that thou canſt live without her, ſeeing ſhe cannot live for thee alone.*

Theſe were the reſolutions towhich my juſt reſentments carried me, but I was a little too weak to put them in execution, and this inconſtant Princeſs to my misfortune had gotten ſuch a dominion over my ſpirit, that it was impoſſible for me to diſengage my ſelf. My grief quickly made it ſelf be taken notice of by thoſe perſons with whom I was moſt familiar, and though I could not entirely conceal it from the Princeſs *Octavia* my Mother, nor from my Siſters, ſhe to whom I did moſt confidently diſcover it was the Princeſs *Cleopatra*. I found in her likewiſe more conſolation than in all the reſt, & though there remained no more of the paſſion which I had once for her, than thoughts conformable to thoſe I had for my Siſters, I found in her ſo much ſweetneſs of ſpirit, ſo much freedome, and greatneſſe of courage, that there was no perſon in the world to whom I ſhould have opened my heart with more confidence: Upon the firſt complaints I made to her concerning this laſt diſpleaſure I had received from *Julia*: *Brother*, ſaid ſhe to me, (for it was *Octavia's* will that we ſhould alwayes uſe this name between us) *I heartily participate in your juſt reſentments, and if* Julia *had confidence enough in*

*me to regulate her actions by my counsel, I would take an order for the future, that you should see your self no more subject to the displeasures which she hath made you sensible of. This is not the first time that I have taken notice of the lightnesse of her mind and have foreseen with grief part of that which is befallen you; but if you believe me, and if it be possible for you, you will not excessively afflict your self: part of this volatile humour of* Julia *will be dissipated by a little more maturity in yeares; and though out of love and complaisance to her self, she permits divers persons to give her testimonies of their affections, yet I make no doubt but that she doth not onely prefer you before all others, but that all her reall affection is yours. Ah Sister,* answered I, *though what you say were true, my condition would not be a jot the better: I care not for a parcell heart, and seeing I gave mine entirely to* Julia, *and that she had once given me hers in the same manner, she cannot give any part of it to any person, without depriving me of that which justly belongs to me.* Cleopatra said all she could in justification of *Julia*, but more to quiet my mind, than to excuse a lightnesse which she could not approve.

In the mean while I continued divers dayes without rendring any visits to *Julia*, and without being present at any of the places which she was accustomed to frequent: and during that time, I did all I possibly could to learn who this new rivall was, which had so readily found a place in her affections. I stay'd some dayes without being able to know the truth; but at last having addressed my self to *Phebe*, one of her maids, who was most acquainted with her secrets, whom I had gained by the presents

ſents I made her, after ſhe had ſuffered her ſelf to be preſſed a great while for fear of her Miſtreſſe's anger, & made me promiſe that I ſhould not diſcover it, ſhe told me it was *Druſus* from whom *Julia* had received that letter and divers others, and that if any perſon had any part in her amity it was *Druſus* above all others.

Upon this diſcovery I was enflamed with choler againſt this rivall, and bearing already no great affection to his houſe, for the reaſons that I have alledged unto you, I was upon the point of making my reſentment appear without any further delay: but I judged I could not do it without diſobliging and mortally offending *Julia*, by diſcovering things to her prejudice, which as yet were ſecret, and I had regard enough to the intereſts of that ingrateſull Princeſs, to retain my ſelf for her ſake. But the violence I did my ſelf in not ſeeing her, quickly produced another effect, which was noted by all the perſons that did obſerve me; and *Julia* her ſelf, whom I could not avoid in thoſe places where of neceſſity I muſt meet her, having taken notice as well as others of the change which my ſadneſs had wrought in my countenance, whereof ſhe knew the cauſe, was poſſibly touched with ſome remorſe: and as affections do not imprint themſelves in her ſpirit, but that ſhe hath liberty enough left; ſo that which ſhe had conceived for *Druſus* was not ſtrong enough to oblige her to be willing to be totally quit of me, and to hinder the deſign of reingaging me. In fine, whether it were out of a reall motion of affection and repentance, or out of a fear of diſpleaſing *Cæſar*; whereupon the Princeſſe *Scribonia*

*bonia*, her mother every day read her lectures, she left looking ill upon me, as she had done in divers meetings, since the last conversation we had had, and by an obliging carriage, and lookes full of sweetnesse, she endeavoured to make me stoop to her lure. I could not resist those efforts without laying a cruell constraint upon my self, but my resentment had ground enough to make me suffer any thing, before it could be dissipated; and I had already so little confidence in *Julia*'s caress's, that I could not look upon them but as the effects of artifice, rather than a reall resentment.

After I had avoided divers times the occasion of speaking to her before the Emperour, I was one day at her passage through a gallery, which leades from hers to the Empresses lodgings, and as I would have passed by her making a profound reverence, without staying, she stept before me, and having taken me by the arme: *You do ill*, said she, *to fly as you do from persons, which possibly love you better than they are obliged to do: I should do ill indeed* answered I very coldly, *if I should fly from them that love me; but besides that I shall hardly have that beliefe concerning you, I only avoid the occasions of displeasing you, and endeavour, as much as is possible for me, to give you that satisfaction that you have desired of me: If I were as cholerick as you,* replyed *Julia*, *I should possibly desire it more than you believe, and if my inclination did not transcend my resentments, I should willingly leave you in an humour, wherein it may be you find some pleasure; but because I cannot render you that justice, without suffering very much my self by it, I forget in part what I*

owe

*owe to my ſelf, to make you remember what we mutually owe each other: Madam,* replyed I, *I owe you all manner of reſpect and ſubmiſſion and that way certainly I ſhall very exactly acquit my ſelf towards you all my life: I do not believe you can require any more of me, if you do not believe you are ſpeaking to* Druſus, *who without doubt owes you his heart and life in recompence of your affections.*

The Princeſſe was troubled at this reproch, as I knew by the change of her countenance, and yet readily compoſing her ſelf: *You do all you can,* ſaid ſhe, *to incenſe me againſt you, but I pardon your paſſion; and if you had contained your ſelf within more reaſonable bounds I ſhould already have cured your mind of a ſuſpicion which you have conceived upon very light appearances. My ſuſpicions,* replyed I, *are become certainty, and I cannot deſire any farther clearing up of thoſe things, which to my misfortune, are but too evident. I have not been able without doubt to behold the fortune of* Druſus *without a mortall griefe, but I ſhould envy him much more, if I did not know that it is very ill-aſſured, and that ſome other will quickly make him loſe what he hath gained from me, rather by his good fortune than by his merit and ſervices.*

When I reproched the Princeſſe with the lightneſſe of her ſpirit, ſhe fell into a violent choler, and beholding me with an eye which ſufficiently expreſſed her indignation: *you ſhall know,* ſaid ſhe, *that the fortune of* Druſus *is not ſo ill-aſſured as you believe, and to give you other impreſſions of my ſpirit, I will put it into ſuch a condition, that you ſhall have much adoe to ſhake it.* Ending theſe words, ſhe quitted

ted me with ſo many appearances of choler, that if I had not been more moved at her inconſtancy, than I could be at her anger, I ſhould have retired from this encounter with a diſpleaſure; which would have left me but little quiet. She began thenceforwards to put her threatnings in execution, and whether it were to do me a ſpite, or to follow her own inclinations, ſhe carried her ſelf ſo towards *Druſus*, that few perſons doubted, but that he had a great ſhare in her affections. He viſited her punctually every day, and ſhe no longer fearing to make me jealous, which had obliged her before to lay ſome conſtraint upon her ſelf, careſſed and favoured him ſo openly, that all the perſons who had any intereſt in the conduct of her life, began highly to diſapprove her proceedings.

Whileſt theſe things paſſed (for I am obliged to ſpeak to you in my relation concerning the affaires of *Coriolanus* and *Cleopatra*, as I believe it hath not been eaſy for thoſe who have recounted the life of thoſe two perſons unto you, to acquaint you with all events without intermingling ſomething concerning my fortune) the newes came to *Rome*, of the riſing of *Mauritania*, of the defeat of the firſt troupes, and the firſt proceedings of *Coriolanus* for the recovery of his Kingdome. This report at firſt ſurprized the ſpirit of *Cæſar*, and inflamed him with a new choler againſt the ſon of *Juba*, againſt whom he was ſufficiently animated by the wounding of *Tiberius*, and the continuall ſollicitations of *Livia*; but a little after he freed himſelf a little of the trouble that this newes had brought him,

him, and though he could not undervalue the person of *Coriolanus*, whom he knew by the great things he had done for his service, to be capable of undertaking and executing all things, yet he little feared his forces, and he believed that those he had in *Africa*, under the command of *Volusius*, were capable of restoring the Countrey to its former tranquility.

In the meane time the enemies of *Coriolanus* did not lose this occasion quite to cry him down with *Augustus*; and *Livia*, as one interessed, forgot nothing which might exasperate the Emperours mind to the most extreme resolutions against him. About this time *Tiberius*, after that his life was despaired of divers times, and he had laine divers moneths in danger, at last was cured of his great wound, and to the great contentment of his friends, he saw himself in a condition to crosse his rivall more than ever. This was the renewing of *Cleopatra*'s sorrows, and that Princesse saw her self exposed afresh to the persecution, which had slept ever since the wounding of *Tiberius*. She recommended to me her own and my friends interests, and found me intended to make them alwayes my own. I was surprized more than all the rest at the first report which arrived of the rising of the *Moores*, and I thought it a little strange, that *Coriolanus*, who in the whole course of his life had reserved nothing from me, should conceale this design so carefully that I never had the least suspicion of it, but the Princesse *Cleopatra* made me such excuses as she believed to be due to our friendship, and assured me that *Coriolanus* would not have concealed

concealed his intention from me, but onely out of the reſpect he bare me, fearing either to render me his enemy, if I took part with *Cæſar*, or to render me odious to *Cæſar*, if after the knowledge of a deſign againſt his ſervice, I ſhould ſtill continue a friend to *Coriolanus*. *Cleopatra* performed the requeſt which *Coriolanus* had made to her with ſo good a grace, and alledged ſuch ſpecious reaſons to juſtify the ſecrecy of *Coriolanus*, that inſtead of taking it ill at his hands, I believed I was obliged to him for it: and not being at that time prepoſſeſſed with any ſuſpicion of his infidelity, I believed eaſily that I ought to impute his reſervedneſs towards me onely to his diſcretion.

*Cleopatra* can teſtify too, to render him the more criminall and odious, in what manner I received the newes of his good ſucceſſes, if the intereſts of *Cæſar*, to which I am inſeparably bound up, could remove me one moment from what I owed to our amity, and if I have not an hundred times for the intereſt of *Coriolanus* put my ſelf in danger of changing the affection of *Auguſtus* into violent reſentments againſt me. It is true, I was not in a condition to take his part ſo highly as I had done before, and after he had been publiquely declared an enemy to *Cæſar*, and the *Romam* Empire, except I would declare my ſelf ſo too, I could not defend him ſo openly in thoſe things which went directly againſt *Cæſar*, as long as he was in armes againſt him, and did every day cut in pieces the *Roman* troupes. But in thoſe things which were more eſſentiall to him, and more important to his repoſe, namely, the preſerving of

*Cleopatra*

*Cleopatra* for him againſt the pretentions of *Tiberius*, I perſevered ſo entirely, that certainly I could not have acted for my ſelf with more ardency and affection. By *Tiberius* his cure ſhe ſaw her ſelf expoſed to thoſe diſpleaſures, from which ſhe had had ſome breathing while; and beſides the effect of the preſſing ſollicitations of *Livia*, *Caſar* knew well enough that he could take no revenge upon *Coriolanus*, which would be more ſenſible to him, than to give *Cleopatra* to his rivall. He cauſed her to be ſpoken to of it, and he ſpake to her of it himſelf in ſuch abſolute termes, that the Princeſſe ſaw her ſelf reduced to the greateſt extremity that ever ſhe was in in her life: *Oh how deteſtable is the ingratitude of* Coriolanus, *after thoſe things which I have ſeen my with eyes! and how happy was that unfaithfull Prince in the perſeverance of the moſt beautifull perſon of the world!* She reſiſted without wavering all the pretentions of *Tiberius* his party, and when they had attempted all other wayes, *Caſar* declared himſelf to her, that if after ſo many entreaties which he had made her to that purpoſe, ſhe would not by faire meanes eſpouſe *Tiberius*, he was reſolved to conſtrain her to it by all his authority; this couragious Princeſſe looking upon him with an aſſurance not onely above her ſex and age, but with a boldneſſe equall to that of the *Porcias*, the *Lucreces*, and the *Catos*: *I do not think Caſar*, ſaid ſhe to him, *that after thou haſt affected in thy government the reputation of a juſt and moderate Prince, rather than of an uſurper and a* Tyrant, *thou wouldſt renew at* Rome *the violence of the* Tarquins, *and begin firſt with the daughter of* Anthony,

ny, *who was thy equall and companion in the Empire; but if this be thy intention, I will ſhare thee the ſhame and reproch which this action may bring upon thee: and as ſhe, whoſe name I bear, and from whom I have received my birth, dyed to avoyd the ſhame which thou preparedſt for her, ſo I ſhall know how to dye too, to avoyd the conſtraint wherewith thou threatneſt me.*

*Cleopatara* uttered theſe words with an action ſo handſome, ſo noble, and ſo hardy, and *Cæſar* found in them ſomething ſo great and ſo penetrative into the moſt ſenſible parts of his ſoul, that he was moved, aſhamed, and confounded at them, and being retired without replying one word to the Princeſs, he proteſted the ſame day to *Livia*, that he would content himſelf to uphold her ſon as much as he could; but whatſoever intreaty or conſideration might oblige him to it, he would never offer any violence to *Cleopatra*. He did not onely make this declaration to *Livia*, but on the morrow he told *Agrippa* and *Mecenas*, that together with reproches which had pierced his heart, he had received from a Maid ſuch inſtructions how to reign, that he ſhould be obliged to her for them as long as he lived; he continued divers dayes much nettled and troubled, and without ſcarce ſeeing the perſons who would have cauſed him to lay conſtraint upon the daughter of *Anthony*.

This accident is remarkable, and the greatneſs of *Cæſar's* courage certainly produced in this rancounter an effect worthy of his actions. *Livia* remained much afflicted, and full of confuſion, and *Tiberius* was no leſs a few dayes after, when with a like reſolution

resolution to that which she had shewed before *Cæsar*. *Cleopatra* protested to him that if he did obstinately seek to espouse her, by any other wayes than by his services, she would infallibly destroy herself, and that he ought to be very certain, that the very day of her marriage should be the day of her funerall. By this couragious resolution in favour of *Coriolanus*, *Cleopatra* recovered the liberty which they had deprived her of, upon the point, that it was most desperate, and I saw this unexpected change with a joy as great as was the confusion of *Tiberius*. He almost dyed with the grief he took at it, and whether it were that he had no hope to make *Cæsar* change his resolution, or whether he himself feared the effect of *Cleopatra's* threatnings, and would not expose himself to the danger of seeing her execute them; but he used no more any authority to acquire her, and employed onely submissions and testimonies of his love.

The affaires of *Coriolanus* were in this condition at *Rome*, when the repose of my minde was ruined there, by the ingratitude and inconstancy of *Julia*. This Princesse, as I told you, either to vex me with jealousie, or to pursue her reall inclinations, made no difficulty of bestowing publick testimonies of affection upon *Drusus*: and she having a spirit which is not troubled with the report and opinion of the vulgar, carried her self so, that scarcely any person at *Rome* made any doubt but that *Drusus* possessed that place in *Julia's* heart which was destined for me, and which sometime I enjoyed. At first I endeavoured to receive this change with indifferency, & to let *Julia* know that I did not envy

*Druſus* his fortune: and to that end I forced my ſelf to put the beſt face upon it I poſſibly could before her, and to appear as little moved at her inconſtancy as if I had not been concerned in it,: but I could not long lay this conſtraint upon my ſelf, and though I was incenſed, I was ſtill a lover, and a very paſſionate one too. To my misfortune all my reſolution proved vain againſt a power to which I had too much ſubmitted my ſelf, and in ſpite of my heart I could not behold the advantages of *Druſus* without being heartily ſenſible of them.

The violent grief I conceived thereupon, quickly made it ſelf remarkable: and not onely the Princeſſe *Octavia*, my Siſters, and my moſt familiar friends perceived it, but the Emperour, who took more intereſt in me than I deſerved, took notice of it with regret, and preſſed me every day to acquaint him with the reall cauſe of it. In diſcovering it to him I had an aſſured meanes to ſatisfie my ſelf, and to revenge my ſelf upon *Julia* and *Druſus*, in ruining the pretentions of my rivall, and declaring the daughter's infidelity to a father who would not have approved of it. I and all the *Romans* knew that the intentions of *Cæſar* were entirely for me, and though *Druſus* were ſon to the Empreſſe, he could not hope to do me any prejudice: but I would not make uſe of this advantage in a caſe wherein I thought I could not do it without baſeneſſe: and ſeeing that by the merit of my perſon I could not conſerve the affections of this volatile Princeſſe, I would not employ the authority of a father for a thing which ſeemed due to my perſon, my love & ſervices. I alledged to *Cæſar* ſometimes the indiſpo-

ſition

ſpoſition of body, & at other times other cauſes of ſadneſſe: and I was not onely unwilling that he ſhould learn the truth from my mouth; but when I ſaw *Octavia*, my Mother and his Siſter (who was intereſſed in my afflictions as much as a good Mother could be) in a reſolution to diſcover that to him which I kept concealed, and to make complaint to him of his daughter with a great deale of reſentment: after I had in vaine requeſted her not to render me that diſpleaſure, I proteſted to her that if ſhe would not condeſcend to this deſire, I would be gone from *Rome*, ſo farre from her that poſſibly in divers yeares ſhe ſhould have no newes of me; the feare of it reſtrained her againſt her deſign; but ſhe ſharply blamed me for my vaine conſiderations, and could not forbear upon divers occaſions to teſtifie her particular reſentment to *Julia*: but if *Octavia* were ill ſatisfied with her, the Empreſſe in revenge had all the cauſe that might be to be contented; and ſeeing her deſignes proceed with all the ſucceſſe ſhe could wiſh, ſhe made ſo many demonſtrations of amity to *Julia*, that if ſhe had been her own daughter ſhe could not have received more.

All theſe things ſtung me at laſt in a part where I was very ſenſible: and according to my judgement my honour finding it ſelf intereſſed, was more impatient than my love. I could not endure that it ſhould be believed that I had quitted a place to *Druſus* which I had firſt poſſeſſed, and which by all reaſon was more due to me than to him; and when I ſought means to make my reſentments appear without injuring the conſideration which was

due to *Cæsar* in the person of his daughter, she gave me so great occasions, that I thought it impossible to dissemble any longer without baseness. In all the assemblies, and all the publick spectacles that the Emperour often exhibited to the people, *Drusus* was alwayes with her: and if at any time by coming late he was distant from her, she called him in my very presence, and made him take the neareſt place to her he could possible.

There is a Sacrifice yearly offered in the *Capitoll* the same day that the city was delivered from the *Gaules*, wherein amongst other ceremonies, one of the principall Roman Ladies, elected for that action by the voyces of the people, goes to make an offering to *Jupiter* of some gifts of acknowledgement in behalf of the Common-wealth, and causes her self to be conducted to the Altar by one of the chiefeſt Romans, and ordinarily by one of her neereſt relations, whom she most esteems. This year *Julia* was entreated to perform this office; and the Emperour, as it is ordinary with the Empress, all the Senat, and the whole Court was present at the Capitoll, and assisted at the Sacrifice: When it was time that *Julia* should approch to the Altar, all the company cast their eyes upon me, as the man who infallibly should accompany her; & what misunderstanding soever was between us, the Emperours will being publickly known, I did not believe she durſt call any other than my self; yet knowing it depended upon her choyce, and distrusting her humour, I did not present my self as I should have done at another time, but the Emperour himself made a sign to me to advance: I rose from my place

place to obey him, and approched to *Julia*: but ſhe ſaved me the labour, and when I was neer enough to give her my hand, ſhe turned her ſelf another way, and called *Druſus* to come, and render her that office.

The greateſt part of the perſons that were in the temple intereſſed themſelves in the affront which I received: and if *Livia*, *Tiberius*, and thoſe of their party were ſatisfied in it: not onely *Octavia* and they that toook my part, but *Auguſtus* himſelf was ſo troubled at it, that had it not been out of reſpect to the ſacredneſs of the place, he had publickly made his diſpleaſure appear. For my part I was ſo much moved at it, that I was quite out of countenance, and not daring for divers conſiderations to expreſs in publick my reſentment to the daughter of *Cæſar*, I retired to my place full of choler and confuſion, and a little after not being able to ſtay any longer in a place wherein I had received this affront, I ſlipt into the preſs and got out of the Temple, without ſtaying till the end of the ſacrifice.

When I was come to my lodging, I quitted my ſelf of thoſe who had taken the pains to accompany me thither, upon my intreaty, that they would grant me an hours liberty to do ſome buſineſs: and a little after knowing that the moſt affectionate among them partly imagining my intentions, would not be far from me; to avoyd the trouble of viſits which I could not have endured in the bad humour I then was, and the obſtacles which might croſs my deſign, I went down ſecretly by a private pair of ſtairs into the garden: and from thence attended

by one Squire onely, I went to the house of *Sulpicia* a Roman Lady of eminent quality, one whom you know, & in whom I had very great confidence. It was before her that I highly exclaimed against the infidelity of *Julia*, and made my complaint freely, as well of this last injury as of those which had preceded, and did violently out with all which lay upon my heart. *Sulpicia* did all she could possible, not to excuse the inconstancy of *Julia* (for she was one of the first to condemn her) but to hinder me from taking the effects thereof so much to heart, and to moderate in part the transports wherewith I was troubled. *If I were* Marcellus, said she to me, *I would deale after another manner than you doe; and the spirit of* Julia *will better be reduced by marks of indifference and coldnesse, than by this boyling humour, and those violent resentments wherein you precipitate your self. And if I were* Sulpicia, answered I to her, *I should give this counsel to my friends; but seeing I am* Marcellus, *interessed in my repose and in my honour, and to my misfortune still passionate for that unfaithfull Princesse, I cannot contain my selfe within that coldnesse and that indifference which you expresse. My love is not extinguished for being injurea: and it is through the indignation of heaven that these effects of ingratitude have not been able to banish it out of my minde. I have not ceased from loving her, though I have forborn in part to render her the deveirs to which I was daily obliged: and if I have supported with moderation the secret testimonies of her change the publick ones have wronged me too much for me to be able to dissemble them.*

After these words and some other discourses that

I had with *Sulpicia*, I called for paper, and without conſulting any more with my former reſpect, in my tranſport I wrote theſe words to *Julia*.

## Marcellus *to the Princeſſe* Julia.

*As long as you injured but my love onely, I ſupported your inconſtancy with patience enough, and I have not demanded any reparation for it; becauſe I believed that by preferring* Druſus *before me, you had ſufficiently puniſhed your ſelfe, you are obliged to me beſides for this, that forſaken as I was I have alwayes out of love to you kept ſecret what I could not diſcover but to your diſadvantage and confuſion; but ſince you have been forward to publiſh it your ſelf, and that to the infidelity which onely wronged my love, you have been pleaſed to adde an injury which wrongs my courage and my honour; you muſt not think it ſtrange, if I grant that to my honour that poſſibly I owed not to my love, and that I ſeeke the ſatisfaction which it demands of me by thoſe wayes, which hitherto the reſpect and conſideration I had for you hinared me from.*

After I had written this letter, I gave it to the Squire who waited upon me, with order to carry it to *Julia* the ſame day: and after his departure having ſtay'd a while longer, but in vain, to find out ſome means to execute my deſign with little noyſe, I took at laſt an horſe and a foot-man from *Sulpicia*'s houſe, and without any other company I went out to ſeek *Druſus*, and to make him draw his ſword whereſoever I could meet him. I

went directly to his house, but having understood at his gate that he was not returned since he went forth to go to the *Capitoll*, and that he had dined with *Mecenas*, I went to passe by *Mecenas* his house, and by good fortune as I came neer the gate I saw *Drusus* come out there on horseback, attended onely by persons on foot, who were not capable to hinder the effect of my resolution. I no sooner saw him but that my resentment violently reinforcing it self, I could hardly forbear running upon him with my sword in my hand, yet I moderated my selfas much as I possibly could, and accosting him with a visage wherein he might read part of my intentions: *Drusus*, said I to him, *I have a moments businesse with you. Drusus* did not stand to make himself farther intreated to hearken to me, but withdrawing some twelve or fifteen paces from those who attended him: *What do you desire of me*, sayes he to me? when we were at liberty of speaking without being over-heard; *I desire*, said I, *to make you know that you have gained by your fortune onely what could be due to none but my self, by the way of merits and services; and that after the knowledge you had of my designes for* Julia, *and my engagement to her, you could not employ your self in her service, nor serve your selfe against me with the inconstancy of her spirit, without declaring your selfe my enemy, and giving me just occasion of proceeding to extremities with you. I am not obliged*, replyed *Drusus*, without being troubled, *to consider your interests to my own prejudice; and since that which you have done against us for the enemies of our family, there hath been no amity between us which might hinder*

*d r me from following my inclinations, and ſeeking my own advantages out of feare of diſpleaſing you: I am willing to believe that I owe to my fortune whatſoever I could acquire in the eſteeme of the Princeſſe* Julia; *but whatſoever I owe to my Fortune, I ſhall know how to defend by valour againſt all thoſe, which ſhall believe their pretentions to be more lawfull than mine. It ſhall be then,* anſwered I, *by the end of thy life or mine, that thou ſhalt diſpute thy rights againſt mine: and without any farther delay we will withdraw our ſelves from thoſe perſons who may oppoſe our intentions, to go and give* Julia, *by an ultimate deciſion, to the moſt valiant or to the moſt fortunate.*

*Druſus* had expected no leſſe: and yet out of the conſideration he had for *Cæſar*, whoſe affection to me was known to him, rather than out of feare of my armes, theſe words troubled him a little; but after he had ſtaid ſome moments without reply, *I am ſorry,* ſaid he, *that I cannot ſatisfy your deſires, and mine, without putting my ſelf in danger of incurring the Emperour's diſpleaſure: but though I might feare all things from his indignation, yet to render what I owe to my honour, I ſhall paſſe by all manner of conſiderations, and will allege no excuſe to be diſpenſed with from the combat which you demand. I expected no leſſe from you,* ſaid I to him, *let us go, and ſeeing our armes are equall, let us no longer delay our mutuall ſatisfaction:* Ending theſe words I ſpurred my horſe through the ſtreet towards the next gate of the City: and *Druſus* quitting the company which followed him, came preſently unto me, and rode along by my ſide with an ardour little different from mine, but at the turning

ing of the firſt ſtreet we met *Tiberius*, attended onely by a great number of ſlaves on foot, and ſome perſons on horſeback. He no ſooner ſaw us alone together, and in the condition wherein he met us, but he gueſſed at the truth, knowing well that for ſome time paſt there had been no ſociety between his brother and I: and not doubting but what had happened at the *Capitoll* that morning, might oblige me to ſome reſentment, in the preſent thought he had of it, he took his brothers horſe by the bridle, ſo that he could not get from him. *Brother*, ſaid he, *whither go you alone with* Marcellus, *in ſo much haſt?* *Druſus* being ſurprized, and not being ready with an anſwer, would have made ſome ſorry excuſe; but *Tiberius* gave no credit to it, and oppoſing his paſſage more than before: *You ſhall not go without me*, added he, *and I am of a relation neere enough to you, not to be ſuſpected in all the affaires you can have with Marcellus.*

Being as I was full of impatience and boyling with choler, and bearing as little affection to *Tiberius* as to *Druſus*, I could not diſſemble the truth, and addreſſing my ſelf to *Tiberius*: *No*, ſaid I to him, *Tiberius, you are not ſuſpected, and you have intereſt enough in your brother's affaires rather to perfect than to break our deſigne. I ſhall quickly find ſome body to entertaine you with an exerciſe like to ours, and you may find an occaſion to make part of the reſentments you have againſt* Coriolanus, *appeare againſt his friend. I had thought*, replyed *Tiberius*, *that* Coriolanus *had been no longer your friend, ſince he was declared the enemy of Ceſar, and of the Empire: but whether it be to end the quarrells, which*

*ſome*

*ſometimes we have had for the intereſts of that* African, *or to ſerve my brother in thoſe which he may have with you, I will not avoid the occaſion of running his fortune: and I believe you will not want one to ſecond you, againſt whom I may conſerve my reputation.*

He ſpake in this manner, when I ſaw haſtening to us the young Prince *Ptolomie*, the ſon of *Anthony* and *Cleopatra*, who upon a ſuſpicion he had of my deſign, ſearched after me all about, with a great deale of earneſtneſſe. This Prince was but eighteen yeares old, but at that age he had already given extraordinary proofes of his courage and vigour: and I knowing that he loved me well enough to ſerve me againſt *Tiberius*, without ſtaggering at it, and that I could not match *Tiberius* with a man more conformable to his birth, I preſently reſolved to employ him, believing that I could not go ſeek a friend elſewhere without loſing a great deale of time, and without giving them an occaſion to hinder our deſign who had an intention to do it. The good opinion I had of this young Prince, and the preſſing occaſion made me to take this reſolution: and becauſe of his youth, and divers other conſiderations, I ſhould not have caſt my eyes upon him, nor have gone to have ſought him to have made him run this fortune. He was no ſooner come to us, but without ſo much as looking upon *Tiberius* and his brother, he told me in termes full of affection, that he ſought me to link himſelf inſeparably to me, and to make my intereſts his own without any diſtinction. By his action, and by his diſcourſe which he uttered with a marvellous grace, I confirmed my ſelf in my deſign, and embracing

him

him with an affection like to his own: *Brother*, ſaid I to him, (for as you know the children of *Anthony*, and thoſe of *Octavia*, alwayes called ſo) *I eſteeme your amity and your courage as I ought, and to teſtify ſo much to you, I offer you to day a fair occaſion of acquiring glory againſt* Tiberius, *I aſſure my ſelf, that the reputation of his valour cannot fright you, and that you love me ſo well as to fight with him, whileſt I do the like with his brother. Doubt it not*, ſaid *Ptolomie* to me, *and believe that I could not receive a more deare teſtimony of your friendſhip, nor an occaſion of ſerving you which I ſhould embrace with more joy. Ah!* cryed *Tiberius*, interrupting us, *it is not my intention, and I will not draw my ſword againſt the brother of* Cleopatra, *upon any condition. I am ſorry*, replyed the young Prince, *that you have that conſideration for me, and I ſhall requite you for it upon another occaſion, wherein the intereſts of* Macellus *are not concerned, but for them* Tiberius, *I ſhall be againſt you without diſpute; and as young as I am I hope you will not blaſt the glory of your actions by drawing a ſword againſt me.*

*Tiberius* contefted yet a long time upon the difficulty he made to fight with the brother of *Cleopatra*; but the young Prince preſſed him ſo, and touched upon his honour in ſo quaint termes, that believing he could not any longer deny him, without injuring his reputation: *Young man*, ſaid he, *you force me to an action, whereunto the love I beare the Princeſſe your Siſter doth not permit me to diſpoſe my ſelf without great repugnance; but you will juſtify me to her, and teſtify unto her the violence you do me.* Having ſpoken theſe words he rode along with

with us without any further diſpute; but as we paſſed into a ſpacious place neer the Temple of *Veſta*, we ſaw a great number of perſons which made haſt to part us, and ſtopt the paſſages out of the City. My friends upon my going alone from *Sulpicia*'s houſe, from whom they underſtood ſome part of my reſentments; and *Druſus* his friends upon my coming to ſeek him at his houſe contrary to my cuſtome, and in the condition I was, and all of them upon what had paſſed at the *Capitoll*, and upon divers other apparences had conjectured the truth, and were ſeparated into divers troops, that they might not fail to find us, and hinder the execution of our deſign. I thought we could have eſcaped from the firſt that appeared by another ſtreet: but when I ſaw great troops coming on every ſide whithersoever I could caſt my eyes, I was ſeized upon by as violent a diſpleaſure as ever I had been ſenſible of in my life: and turning my ſelf towards *Druſus* with an action that ſufficiently expreſſed my choler: *We can go no further*, ſaid I, *but we will not quit one another in this manner, and before the people who are coming to us can have time to part us, one of us will have time enough to draw blood of his enemy.*

I had no ſooner made an end of theſe words, but I had my ſword in my hand: and *Druſus* having been no leſs forward than my ſelf to that action, we thruſt at one another with a great deal of animoſity: *Ptolomie* obliged *Tiberius* to do the ſame, and in the preſence of a thouſand witneſſes all four of us began a combat, which could not have been of any long continuance by reaſon of its violence, though

though the great number of those who ran to part us had not hindred the sequell. At the first passe I received a great wound in the thigh, and *Drusus* was run through the shoulder; and young *Ptolomie* having charged *Tiberius* like a Lion, they slightly hurt one another at the first bout; but when we would have gone to it again, we had not the liberty, and we were environed by so many persons, that whatsoever *Drusus* and I could do, it was not possible for us to engage any more. This hinderance of my most violent desires made me exceed the bounds of moderation towards my most officious friends; and in stead of thanking them for the care they took of my life, I expressed my displeasure in such terms as they would not have taken at my hands if they had not been really my friends. Nevertheless there was a necessity that I should be patient; and *Agrippa* with divers of the most noble Romans conducted *Ptolomie* to *Octavia's* house, whilest *Domitius* with a great number of others carried home *Tiberius* and his brother.

*Octavia* though she were endued with a great courage, the Princess *Cleopatra* and my Sisters could not see me bloody without fear and grief; but they were better satisfied, when my wound having been searched, was not found dangerous, though it were great. *Ptolomie* was hurt in one of his arms, but it was very slightly; and the Princess his Sister, who was afraid when she saw the blood upon his habit, was not sorry that by that little he had lost, he had testified his amity to *Marcellus*, and his courage to all the Romans.

The report of our quarrell being presently spread abroad,

abroad, the whole city took part with our intereſts; but I may truly ſay, that how great ſo ever the credit of *Livia* was, my party was the greater, and the moſt powerfull: and beſides the affection, which through my good hap all the diſintereſſed Romans bare me, the authority of *Auguſtus*, who for all the love he bare his wife, did not ſtick to declare himſelf for me, fortified it very much. He did me the honour to come and ſee me when my wound was ſcarce dreſs'd; and he was no ſooner come neer my bed, but embracing me with as much affection and tenderneſſe as if I had been his own ſon: *What* Marcellus, ſaid he to me, *are you ſo prodigall of a life that is is as deare to me as my own? and do I ſee you in danger at* Rome *cloſe by me by the children of* Livia, *after you had eſcaped ſo many dangers againſt the armes of our enemies? Sir*, ſaid I to him, *I have been but in few perilous encounters, and that were not enough to oblige you to the care which out of an extraordinary goodneſſe, you take of me. No danger*, replyed *Cæſar*, *can be ſo ſlight in relation to you, but 'tis very terrible to me; and you know I love* Marcellus *well enough, to be as ſenſible of his hurt as if I had received it my ſelf: but in fine, what is the occaſion that hath urged you to ſo violent extremities againſt the ſon of* Livia? *Sir*, anſwered I, *it was for ſome words which* Tiberius *and* Ptolomie *had together concerning* Cleopatra: *and I loving the children of* Anthony *as my brethren, as you and the Princeſſe* Octavia *would have me, could not ſeparate my ſelf from their intereſts any more upon this than any other occaſion.*

*Auguſtus* ſhook his head at this diſcourſe, and looking upon me with an action which ſufficiently aſſured

assured me, that he did not believe me: *I only asked you this question,* said he, *that I might receive from your own mouth the confirmation of a thing, which I have the true relation of already from my Sister: your discretion is admirable, that when you have such just accuse to accuse the inconstancy, the ingratitude, and the imprudence of* Julia, *you do not open your mouth to complain of it: but I shall know how to take such order as is fitting, both as the father of* Julia, *and as being interessed in the repose of* Marcellus: *and I shall let* Drusus *and* Julia *know the displeasure I have received from the ambition of the one, and the ill conduct of the other. Ah! Sir,* cryed I, *the Princesse* Octavia *could not afflict me more sensibly, than in rendering me criminall as she hath done, both towards* Julia, *and towards your self: and if in the transports of my passion I have made complaints to her sometimes as to my Mother, she should have remembred, that persons in love are not alwayes rationall in their discourses and actions. I have no cause to complaine of the Princesse* Julia; *I have received favours from her, above what I could justly pretend to: and if I could not render her so much affection or acknowledgement by my services as I could desire, I have no body to accuse for it but my self, on whom the Gods have not bestowed qualities sufficiently amiable to merit the affections of* Julia. *Marcellus,* replyed the Emperour, *by your procedure so full of discretion and goodnesse, you render* Julia *yet more criminall, and I will let her know how sensible I am of the displeasure she hath done me, in such a manner, that for the future she shall be more circumspect to avoid the occasions of it. Ah! Sir,* said I with an action full of

tranſport, *yet cannot upon my conſideration expoſe the Princeſſe to the leaſt diſpleaſure, without bringing me to my grave*; *and though it were true, that I could not conſerve the goodneſſe ſhe once ſhewed me, I ſhould acknowledge the fortune to be above me, ſo that I ſhould attribute the loſſe of it rather to the juſtice of the Princeſſe than to her inconſtancy. You flatter her too much,* added *Cæſar*; *but ſeeing you love her ſo much as not to deſire any reparation of her fault, that might cauſe any grief to her, I will ſpare her for your ſake, and will onely command her to ſee* Druſus *no more, and to diſpoſe her ſelf to be married to you ſo ſoon as you are recovered. Sir,* replyed I, *in this grace which you offer me, I finde all the felicity I could wiſh: but though it were greater yet I would not accept of it While I lived, if the inclinations of* Julia *muſt be forced to beſtow it upon me. She is of a birth not to ſuffer violence for the fortune of* Marcellus; *and it is by my love, Sir, and by my ſervices that I ought to acquire her, rather than by your authority. There will be no need,* anſwered the Emperour, *to force the inclinations of* Julia *to oblige her to marry you: and I aſſure my ſelfe whatſoever fault the inconſtancy of her ſpirit hath made her commit, that you are not onely more dear to her than* Druſus, *but that ſhe will preferre you with all her heart before all other perſons that I could preſent to her.*

The Emperour had ſome other diſcourſe with me upon this ſubject, whereby he endeavoured a little to compoſe my ſpirit: after which he left me, proteſting he ſhould not be ſatisfied if I did not quickly recover the health of my body, and the repoſe of my mind. I knew afterwards that he had groſſe

words with the Empreſſe the ſame day, complaining very much of her for favouring the pretenſions of her ſon, in prejudice of the deſign he had for me, wherewith ſhe was long ſince acquainted, and commanded her to forbid her ſon from ſeeing the Princeſs any more upon deſign. He chid *Julia* too very ſharply: and after he had repreſented to her the diſpleaſure ſhe had cauſed him, and the danger whereinto by her imprudence ſhe had caſt the chief amongſt the Romans, he commanded her to ſee *Druſus* no more, except it were to make him loſe all the hopes ſhe could have given him. I know not what effect this produced upon the ſpirit of *Julia*; the ſecret whereof is very difficult to know: but I verily believe, that as paſſions do not ſtrongly fix themſelves in her ſoul, ſo ſhe took leſſe to heart the violence which was offered to the affection which poſſibly ſhe might bear to *Druſus* than another perſon could have done: and I am ignorant likewiſe whether it were by the commandement of the Emperour, or upon ſome other motion, that ſhe diſpoſed her ſelf to doe what ſhe did in my favour: but howſoever it was, the next day ſhe came to viſit me with the Princeſſe *Scribonia* her Mother, whowould needs do me this honour. I ſtarted at the ſight of her, either out of reſentment or love; and I knew not how at firſt to judge, whether I ought to rejoyce at this viſit or not: and this ſight did ſo much diſorder me that I could not anſwer the civilities of *Scribonia*, but with confuſion.

*Octavia*, *Cleopatra*, my Sifters, and ſome other perſons, were by my bed when the two Princeſſes entred, and after the firſt diſcourſes of *Scribonia*, whereby

whereby with a great deale of care and affection she informed her self of my health, and expressed the sorrow she received for my hurt, she had a minde to give me t me to entertain her daughter, with whom for divers considerations she earnestly desired my reconciliation: and taking *Ottavia* by one hand, and *Cleopatra* by the other, under pretext of enquiring the particulars of my quarrell with *Drusus*, she led them another way, and left me alone with *Julia*, or at least the persons which remained were far enough off, so that they could be no hinderance to our conversation.

*Julia* had a good opportunity to begin, and I was so troubled, that for a long time I could not finde words wherewith to entertaine her; neither did she expect it, but as soon as she judged her self to be out of the hearing of any person, after she had cast a look upon me composed of severity and sweetnesse: *I know not* Marcellus, said she, *where to begin, whether with complaint or with satisfaction; you have in appearance great cause to accuse me, and in effect you have extremely offended me: if I were as forward in my resentments as you have been in yours, I should possibly have made you know, that my spirit is not over-ruled by the ways which you have followed; but I have been willing to pardon you partly in regard of your passion which doth not alwayes permit reason to act with entire liberty, and partly in regard of an inclination which your deportments have not been able to banish out of my minde, though they have obliged me to keep it a long time concealed.*

I cannot tell you after what manner I received these first words of *Julia*, nor what impression they

made at first upon my spirit, because I gave but little credit to them; but I remember well that I answered her with coldnesse enough: *Madam, if the offences I have done you were known to me, I should beg your pardon for them with all the repentance they could require, and should submit my selfe without repugnance to all the punishments you would inflict upon me for their expiation; but the Gods are my witnesses, that hitherto I have believed my selfe to be very innocent towards you: and as I am very far from expecting satisfaction from you for the evils you made me suffer, so I know not for what I owe you any, except it be for having loved you possibly more than you desired, and for not being able to support the losse of your affections with an absolute unsensibility. I should not think it strange,* replyed Julia, *or at least I should not complaine of you at all, that the losse of my affections had caused you a displeasure: but to see that upon an ill-grounded suspicion, which if you had expected with sweetnesse and moderation, I should have cleared up to you so as to have given you perfect satisfaction, you should flye to extremities, and break off from me with a frowardnesse altogether contrary to the respect and love which I thought I merited from you, and that you should forbeare to visit me, or so much as look upon me in those places where you met me; and that when out of an excesse of goodnesse which I did not owe you, I sought occasions to be reconciled, and condescended to make you excuses and reparations, you rejected them with pride and disdaine, and dealt with* Julia *as with a person who could not be without your affection. After all this* Marcellus, *do you think it strange that I should revenge my self of your scorn by some action that might be displeasing*

*ſing to you, and that I ſhould make much of another to vex you, and beſtow that upon him in your preſence out of reſentment. Which he could not hope for from my inclination? did you believe that* Julia *was a perſon ſo baſe and of ſo little conſideration with you, that upon the leaſt ſuſpicion, or rather the leaſt* Capricio *you ſhould come to ſuch termes with her as you have done? Is it by this proud and imperious manner of action that a ſpirit like mine is obliged? and did you imagine that I ought to ſuffer all things without any mark of ſenſibility: ſeeing that at the lighteſt matters you fly beyond all the bounds that love and decency could preſcribe?*

She pronounced theſe words with impetuoſity, and by the power ſhe had over me ſhe gave them ſuch authority as forced my ſpirit in part to ſuffer the effect which ſhe would have them produce. Yet I did not find my ſelf convinced: and continuing in my former termes out of an aſſurance of my own innocency: *Certainly I ſhould be faulty,* ſaid I, *and worthy of all the evill you have made me ſuffer, if I were ſuch as you have repreſented me: but you knew very well your ſelf, if you pleaſe to call it to mind, that inſtead of dealing with you in that manner wherewith you reproch me, I have alwayes looked upon you with all the veneration that a* Divinity *could exact: and that never any ſpirit was fuller of ſubmiſſion and deference towards another, than mine was towards yours. You have not poſſibly forgot to how many things this reſpect made me cloſe mine eyes, whereby I might very apparently have conjectured my misfortune, what credit I blindly gave to all that you were pleaſed to perſwade me to concerning the Prince of* Mauritania:

*and how often I have given my eyes and my judgement the lye onely to receive the impressions, which you would give me: If upon the knowledge of* Drusus *his good fortune which he merited not to my prejudice; I have forborne to render you visits, and have not sought occasions of seeing you as formerly, I have done it in obedience to your self, or at least to please you, after I understood from your own mouth, that I could oblige you in nothing more. If I forgot my self, when you tooke the paines to speake to me, in expressing something to you of the knowledge I had of* Drusus *his fortune, in so just a resentment a moderate complaint was pardonable enough, and if I could not suffer these last and publick markes of his good hap, you cannot think it strange, if you know that I have an heart sensible of love and honour, and incapable of suffering the outrages it received in both, by your preferring of* Drusus, *before me. You may without doubt,* replyed *Julia, find some excuses for your procedure, which I should easily receive from any other but your self; and I should not have been very sensible of any thing from you which might have moved, or displeased me, if I had not born you a reall affection; but from you, whom I have so dearely loved, the least things touch me to the heart: and as I believed that you were much more obliged to me, than all others, I could not see you do any thing to the contrary, and from a distast, which I should easily have imputed to the first motions of your passion passe to an obstination against me, without being both moved at it, and sensible of it in another manner, than without doubt I should have been, had it been from any person lesse deare to me than Marcellus.*

I was about to answer her I know not how, being

ing uncertain what beliefe I ſhould give to her words, when ſhe laid one of her hands upon my mouth; and accompanying this action with an all-attractive look, and a geſture full of ſweetneſſe, and the ſecret charme wherewith ſhe ſubdues hearts: *Speake no more*, ſaid ſhe, *and let neither of us ſeek any farther juſtification. I confeſſe we have both failed, and my deſire is that we may agree, and be perfectly reconciled for the future.* As ſhe uttered theſe words ſhe preſſed her hand againſt my mouth, whether it were to hinder me from ſpeaking, or by this favour abſolutely to diſarme my juſt reſentments. *O the power of this Tyrannicall paſſion which we call love. or rather the feeblenеſſe of a ſoul ſubject to love! by this a Soul loſes its light, and ordinary underſtanding; and by this a ſoul, which in the other actions of our life leaves the government entirely to reaſon, ſubmits without reſiſtance to an imperious aſcendant, which overturnes all rules, deſtroyes all appearances, and cloſes our eyes againſt all things but what may conſerve our error.*

Never poſſibly was any lover more juſtly unſatisfied with the perſon beloved, than I was with *Julia*. never was any inconſtancy more clearly declared than hers, nor ever was a Soul, fortified, as I thought, with a more firme reſolution than mine, and yet (I am aſhamed, *Tiridates*, to confeſſe it to you) at the leaſt attempt that this inconſtant Princeſſe would make to appeaſe the revolt of my ſpirit, which had rebelled againſt her authority, ſhe reduced it to a blind ſubmiſſion with all the facility that might be. I could not reſiſt either the words, or the lookes, or the charming action

of this Princeſſe, and though by the light of the little reaſon I had left, I perceived part of her artifice, and could not find in her words any juſtification of her uſage towards me, yet all the reflections I could make upon what was paſt had no power to keep or hinder me from falling again into the ſnare, which I ſaw, and through my cruell deſtiny could not avoid.

In fine whether out of weakneſſe I gave credit to part of that, which *Julia* was pleaſed to perſwade me to, or not believing it, I was forced by the empire ſhe had uſurped over me to paſſe by whatſoever my reaſon could repreſent to me, and neglected all things, that might ſerve for my defence, I ſubmitted to the yoke more than ever and ſaw my ſelf abandoned in one moment of all my reſo'utions and reſentments; I caſt my eyes upon her face, and fetching a ſigh and preſſing her hand againſt my mouth with a more paſſionate action than ever: *O Julia*, ſaid I to her, *who can be able to defend himſelf againſt yous when you are pleaſed entirely to employ all your powers*! I will not repeat to you all the diſcourſe that paſſed between us at this reconciliation; it will be ſufficient to let you know that *Julia* forgot nothing, which might conduce to my ſatisfaction: and to perfect my cure ſhe promiſed me never to look upon *Drauſus*, but as the moſt indifferent perſon in the world.

A little after *Scribonia* and *Octavia* being returned to us, they read in my countenance part of the truth, and *Scribonia* who earneſtly deſired that I ſhould be reconciled to her daughter, ſeemed as well contented with it as if ſome greater fortune had

had befallen her. After this first visit *Julia* gave me many more with her mother, till I was cured; and by the continuance of her caresses, and her well-placed favours, she so perfectly banished out of my mind all the remainders of the troubles she had raised there, that I hardly remembred them; and when I went abroad, I visited her, and served her in the same manner as I had formerly done, before *Drusus*, engaged himself in her service. She was punctuall enough in what she had promised concerning her quitting *Drusus*, and by a revolution which I knew neither how to comprehend, nor approve, though it were to my advantage, she treated that Prince in such sort, that the people of *Rome* could hardly be of the opinion that she ever esteemed him in the least. She never so much as sent to enquire how he did during the time that his wound retained him in his bed, after the day of our reconciliation, and when he was cured, and would have rendred her visits, she received him with such coldnesse or disdain rather, as quickly made him perceive that his pretentions to her were ruined. To the first complaints he would have made to her of it she contented her self to say, that she must be obedient to the Emperours commands, who had enjoyned her not to let him live in the hopes he had conceived of her, but to give her affections entirely to *Marcellus*, but when he would have pressed her further, alledging to her that when she gave him the first testimonies of her good will, she was not ignorant of the Emperour's intentions, which were alwayes inclined to *Marcellus*, and that since he had not been guilty of a-

ny

ny action which might make her ſo ſuddainly change her inclinations: *Druſus*, ſaid ſhe, *would you have me confeſſe the truth? When I began to ſhew you countenance, I was unſatisfied with* Marcellus: *but I was not abſolutely broken off from him: I made uſe of you to reduce him to his duty; and I had no better meanes to effect it than the jealouſy which I raiſed in him by my well treating of you: but now we are reunited according to the Emperours intention, and that he is reſolved ſhortly to joyne us together for ever, I counſell you,* Druſus, *to dream of ſomething elſe, and to quit all the pretenſions you have had to* Julia, *ſince the will of her father and her own proſe inclinations deſign her for another.*

Never poſſibly was a man ſurprized as *Druſus* was at a diſcourſe in all appearance ſo little expected; and he was ſo offended at it, and did ſo highly reſent it, that all the reſpect he bare the Emperour and ſuch a Princeſſe as *Julia*, was neceſſary to hinder him from being tranſported with anger. *Julia* gave him no time to reply, but retiring herſelf as ſoon as ſhe had done ſpeaking, ſhe left him at liberty to diſgeſt his adventure.

*Druſus* being poſſeſſed with a violent grief, continued divers dayes in a ſtrange irreſolution, not knowing what courſe to take in ſo croſſe a conjuncture. As he really loved *Julia*, he could not diſpoſe himſelf to loſe the hopes he had conceived without very great violence, and his firſt thoughts inclined him to call me to account for his misfortune, and to end that which upon the ſame quarrell we had already begun. The ſevere prohibitions which the Emperour had laid upon us were not able

to

to avert him from it; and being naturally endued with the height of courage he eaſily paſſed by all manner of difficulties and dangers, which might impede his reſolution: but a little after having made a ſtrong reflection upon the uſage full of ſcorn and indignity which he had received from *Julia*, and valuing himſelf according to his own worth, he was not of opinion that for a perſon of that humour, and by whom he had been ſo uſed, he was obliged to attempt either the hazard of a combat, or the danger of drawing *Cæſar's* indignation upon him, or to expoſe himſelf to the leaſt pain or danger, which might expreſs any remainder of affection to her, or any grief for her loſſe.

It was not without great ſtruglings that *Druſus* gained this victory over his paſſion; but joyning divers conſiderations to his reſentment which might ſtrengthen the deſignes wherewith his choler inſpired him, and rightly judging that though he might hope for a ſecond change of *Julia's* mind, yet he ſhould hardly overcome *Auguſtus* his will, which was wholly bent for me by the counſell of his friends, his kindred, and *Livia* her ſelf, who ſympathized as much in his reſentment as ſhe had done in his good ſucceſs, he took a finall reſolution never to think more of *Julia*. So long as he continued irreſolute he ſeldome appeared in publick: but when he was confirmed in his deſign, he did not onely ſhew himſelf to his friends with his former cheerfulneſs, he did not onely let *Julia* know upon all occaſions how little he was troubled at the loſſe of her affections: but to make it finally appear how little he was intereſſed in the buſineſſe,

and how little he envied me, from the coldneſſe which was between us, he deſired to paſſe to another kind of life with me, and accoſting me one day in ſuch a manner as if there had never been any quarrell between us: *Marcellus*, ſaid he to me, *I have formerly yielded* Julia *to you againſt my will, but now I leave her to you with all my heart: I am willing to believe that you will conſerve her affections a long time, and that ſpirit which you are better acquainted with than I, will poſſibly ſtay it ſelf upon a merit ſuch as yours; I will not any more diſpute nor envy that fortune to a Prince, who without doubt deſerves a better, but to comfort me for what you have taken from me, which was more juſtly due to you than to me, I deſire the honour of your friendſhip, whereof hinceforward I will make greater account than of all the affections of* Julia.

This diſcourſe of *Druſus* ſurprized me at the firſt, and I knew not at the beginning how I ought to anſwer him, if at the end he had not made me to underſtand his intention; and by the gentileneſs of his proceeding had not obliged me to expreſs the like freedome to him. *Druſus*, replyed I to him, *if the affection of* Julia *were more due to me than to you, it was becauſe I had beſtowed the greateſt part of my life in her ſervice, whereas you had hardly employed ſome moneths of yours therein. I hope I ſhall fix her ſpirit better than I have done for the time paſt, ſince you ceaſe to diſpute her with me, and I ſhall little feare my other rivalls, ſince by my good fortune I am freed from the moſt formidable. The obligation I have to you for it, makes me willingly grant you the friendſhip you demand, and I ſhall alwayes infinitely eſteeme*

*eſteeme yours for the knowledge I have of your vertue.*

After theſe words we embraced each other, and as I really had as good an opinion of *Druſus* as could be conceived of any man, and that his perſon was very amiable in all reſpects, in ſpight of the diſpleaſures I had received from him, I had no unwillingneſſe to become his friend after he expreſſed a deſire of it, and requeſted it with ſo good a grace. In effect after this day we began to converſe together, not onely as two perſons which had no quarrell to each other, but as two men which had a particular eſteem of each other. *Druſus* accoſted *Julia* no more, but only to render her that which was due to *Cæſar's* daughter without any other intereſt, & he never expreſſed either by diſcourſe or action that any thing of his paſſion was yet remaining. *Livia* being extraordinarily animated againſt *Julia*, and loſing the hope of being more cloſely allyed to *Auguſtus*, confirmed her ſon in his reſolution, and counſelled him to ſeek by other wayes a fortune which could not eſcape his birth and good qualities.

At this time I lived in ſome repoſe with *Julia*, receiving from her all manner of proofs of her good will, and expecting from *Cæſar* within a few dayes the concluſion which ſhould finally remedy my paſſion. The Princeſs *Cleopatra*, of whom I am obliged to ſpeak to you, had likewiſe time to take breath after the perſecutions under which ſhe had ſo much ſuffered, and though ſhe were ſtill expoſed to the attempts of *Tiberius*, ſhe was no longer affraid of them, ſeeing they were no longer upheld by a tyrannicall

rannicall authority; and *Cæsar* keeping himself exactly to the oath which he had made, permitted *Tiberius* onely to act by his services, without offering any violence to the inclinations of *Cleopatra*: It was not but that he caused her to be solicited in favour of his wife's son, and offered her such advantageous conditions in espousing him, as might content the highest ambition: but it was alwayes by wayes of sweetness, without employing his authority in it; and by these means, as well as by the former, he wrought so little effect upon the spirit of this constant Princess, that *Tiberius* despairing to conquer her, resolved to quit *Rome*, with an intention, as it was reported, to go seek out *Coriolanus* in *Africa*, and call him to an account, not onely as an obstacle to his felicity, as far off as he was, but also for the wound he had given him, by which he was reduced to the extremity of his life, and for which he was engaged in honour to require satisfaction.

He was upon the point of departure, and I in the condition and posture I told you of, when the news came to *Rome* of the great victories which *Coriolanus* had obtained in *Africa*. 'Twas known, that after he had vanquished all *Volusius* his Lieutenants in divers battels, he had at length in the last totally defeated him, and taken *Volusius* himself prisoner, that the two *Mauritania*'s had generally submitted to his armies, and that nothing resisted him in his Father's dominions, whereof he was then the peaceable possessor.

Whatsoever interest I took in the Emperour's affairs, the amity I bare to *Coriolanus* was more strong, and though I was obliged to conceal part of my

my thoughts, that I might not totally incenſe the mind of *Auguſtus* againſt me, I felt a joy for the good ſucceſſes of my friend, equall at leaſt to what I could be ſenſible of for mine own: I expreſſed it to *Cleopatra* continually; and that generous Princeſſe, though for the conqueſt of a Crown ſhe could not more eſteem of a Prince, whom ſhe loved for the onely qualities of his perſon, yet ſhe rejoyced in the part ſhe took in his glory, and we entertained each other with our mutuall ſatisfaction, when we received the knowledge of the little cauſe we had to intereſſe our ſelves in the good fortunes of that unfaithfull Prince; and that by the black treaſon which he committed againſt each of us, he obliged us to change our former affections into great reſentments, and a violent hatred againſt him. You are about to underſtand, *Tiridates*, the cauſe of this change which hath amazed you: and as I paſs to the laſt effects of the inconſtancy of *Julia*, I will likewiſe relate to you the black perfidiouſneſs of this ungratefull friend, whoſe defence you have undertaken without knowledge of him, whom I cannot call to mind without afflicting my ſelf with too juſt a grief.

*Hymen's*

# HYMEN'S *Præludia*:
## OR,
## Love's Maſter-piece.

### PART V. LIB. IV.

### ARGUMENT.

Marcellus *being about to continue his Story, is interrupted by the return of* Arſanes *from* Judea, *who brings the ſad newes of* Mariamne's *death.* Tiridates *is ſtruck to the heart with it, and commands* Arſanes *to give him the particulars. He relates* Salome's *plots to abuſe* Herod's *jealouſy to* Mariamne's *ruine.* Mariamne *inconſiderately reproches* Herod *with the bloudy orders he had left with* Joſeph *and* Sohemus *to kill her if he miſcarried. This heightens* Herod's *jealouſy which is blown into a flame by* Salome's *malice. He impriſons* Mariamne *and ſends Judges to examine her. She refuſes, and* Herod *overcome by his Love offers reconcilement. She rejects him, which puts him into a rage.* Philon *and* Sohemus *are put to the torture, who confeſſe ſomething concerning* Tiridates. Herod *by* Salome's

Salome's *instigation gives order to put* Mariamne *to death, which is immediately executed.* Mariamne *dyes with an unexampled constancy.* Arsanes *having finished his story,* Tiridates *expires, and fulfills* Thrasillus *his prediction.*

*Arcellus* would have gone on with his narration, and *Tiridates*, who out of the interest he took in the justification of *Coriolanus*, had heard this passage with impatience, disposed himself to great attention: when he saw a man come into his chamber, by the sight of whom all the curiosity he had to hear strange adventures was dissipated, and at whose sight he appeared all amazed and astonished. This was *Arsanes* that faithfull servant, to whom he had such grand obligations, whom a moneth before he had sent into *Judea* to learn newes of the Queen *Mariamne*. *Tiridates* no sooner knew him, but the trouble of his soul discovered it self by divers signs; and by this powerfull seizure almost forgetting the presence of *Marcellus*, and raising himself up to *Arsanes*, very much moved: *Ah! Arsanes*, cryed he, *What newes do you bring me? Arsanes*, who possibly upon the way was prepared to disguise to his Master the truth of the news he had heard, being touched at his sight with an extraordinary tenderness, had not constancy enough to hold the resolution he had taken, and in stead of making him the answer which he had premeditated to no purpose; by a silence full of trouble and confusion, and a visage full of the deepest characters of sorrow, he

made him comprehend that he had none but bad newes to tell him: yet he would have forced himself to dissemble some part of it, and opened his mouth twice to speake against his thoughts, but by the constraint which he would have laid upon himself, his disorder was redoubled; and not finding courage enough to performe what in vain he had attempted, he let fall some teares from his eyes, which he held fixed upon the ground, and continued mute with the countenance of a man forlorne.

This was speech enough to make himself be understood by the unfortunate *Tiridates*. At this sight a mortall shivering ran through his whole body, and he accounted himself condemned by this mournefull silence more certainly than by a fatall sentence: all the feare which the troubled thoughts of the precedent dayes, and the terrible dreames of the last night had imprinted in his mind, returned upon him in a moment with mortall terrours; and he remained before *Arsanes* in a posture which sufficiently expressed the cruell agitation of his Soule.

After he had a while beheld the countenance of his faithfull servant, whereupon he saw his misfortune lively painted out, he retired a few steps back, looking upon him with a very pitifull gesture: *Ah! Arsanes*, said he, *I am undone; and without doubt you have none but sad newes to tell me.* *Arsanes* for all this discourse did not as yet see himself in a condition to reply, and the compassion which he had for the griefe, which he himself was about to cause in his deare master, produced such tender effects in his spirit, that he was forced to give a fresh course

to

to thoſe teares which before he had endeavoured to retain with violence.

The afflicted *Tiridates* reading the confirmation of his miſery in theſe ſad marks of ſo ſtrong a griefe: *Ah!* cryed he, *let us enquire no farther, we muſt dye without doubt, either* Mariamne *deteſts me, or elſe* Mariamne *hath no longer a being in the world.* At theſe words he let himſelf fall upon a chaire, where he continued like a man forlorn, and in a condition which touched the ſoul of *Marcellus* with a tender compaſsion.

In the meane time *Arſanes* uſed his utmoſt endeavours to compoſe himſelf: and having recovered courage enough to be able to ſpeake, after he had dried up his teares in part, and attempted to fix ſome markes of conſtancy upon his countenance: *Sir* ſaid he to his maſter, *the affection I bear you hath betrayed me, and your preſence hath made me loſe all the reſolution I had taken to ſpare you, or at leaſt a while to keep from you a violent griefe: I might have concealed from you for a time the ſad newes I had to tell you: but in fine I could not keep you from the knowledge of it, and it is of ſuch importance that the report of it will quickly be ſpread over all the world. I much wonder that it is not already come to your eares by ſome other mouth than mine: and it is by the cruelty of his deſtiny, that the moſt affectionate of your ſervants ſees himſelf reduced to give you the moſt ſenſible diſpleaſure that you can poſſibly receive.*

*Arſanes* ſtopt at theſe words, and *Tiridates* finding in them whatſoever of cruelty his feares had ſuggeſted to him, lifted up his eyes and hands to heaven with an action full of tranſport: *Mariam-*

*ne is dead*, ſaid he, with a great cry, Mariamne *is dead without doubt, and for a diſaſter of any other nature* Arſanes, *would never have loſt his courage. You have but too rightly divined*, replyed *Arſanes*, Mariamne *is not any longer in the world; and by a deplorable deſtiny I am condemned to acquaint you with this fatall truth.*

Theſe words were like the blow of a thunderbolt, wherewith the unfortunate *Tiridates* ſaw himſelf ſtruck dead; and *Arſanes* had no ſooner uttered them, but the Prince his ſtrength utterly failed him, his eyes grew dim, and he remained cold and pale between *Marcellus* his armes, who ſeeing him faint ſtept out to helpe him: the deſolate *Arſanes*, and the *Roman* Prince could not ſee him in this condition, without being touched with a tender compaſſion: and *Marcellus* who in ſtead of the comfort that he was made to hope for, ſaw himſelf conducted by his ill fortune to this pitifull ſpectacle, received this addition to his diſpleaſures with great reſentments. He ſtrove as much as the compaſsion of human miſeries, and the motions of his particular generoſity could oblige him, to give aſsiſtance to the Prince being fallen into a trance; he threw water in his face divers times, and uſed all the ordinary remedies, to make him recover his ſences; but it was no ſuch eaſy matter, and th: Prince was in ſo deep a ſwoone, that for a whole houre they could not make him come to himſelf.

At length by tormenting him they forced him to open his eyes, but he opened them onely to terrible objects, and there was nothing in the world but

what

what was odious and horrible to him. Grief was too ſtrong in his ſoul to produce common effects; and it was not expreſſed by exclamations or termes; death onely, which at the firſt preſented it ſelf to the deſpairing Prince, and ſuch a death as *Thraſillus* had formerly foretold, ſeemed conformable to his thoughts, and was received by him as his onely remedy and as his onely conſolation. He turned his eyes, which already looked wildly, and were bepainted with the colours of death towards *Arſanes*, who ſtood by him melting into teares, and ſtifling ſome ſobs which would have hindred the paſſage of his ſpeech: *Is* Mariamne *dead then*, ſaid he, *and doth* Tiridates *ſtay one moment in the world after the loſs of* Mariamne? *Arſanes* had not the aſſurance to give an anſwer to theſe words, and *Marcellus* well conſidering that it was unjuſt and unprofitable to oppoſe the firſt motions of ſo lively and ſo juſt a griefe, kept the like ſilence, and contented himſelf to ſtay by *Tiridates*, whom during his trance they had laid upon the bed, and to obſerve his actions, for fear leaſt in the violence of his deſpaire he might make ſome attempt upon his own life. He made no ſign of having any ſuch deſign, and perceiving that death approched of it ſelf, without being otherwiſe invited, he attended it with a ſatisfaction which partly moderated his griefe; hardly any complaints iſſued out of his mouth, he onely uttered ſometimes the name of *Mariamne* and continuing in a profound meditation upon his calamity, he drew on, as much as he could poſſible, by theſe fatall thoughts, the remedy which muſt reunite him to his beloved Queen.

After an hours silence, which had something in it more dolefull than the most mournfull cries and lamentations, having called *Arsanes* to him: *Inform me*, said he to him, *what was the end of the Queen* Mariamne, *tell me whether the Gods or men advanced it, and do not forget the particularities of it, which are come to your knowledge. Ah Sir*, said Arsanes, *spare me if you please that displeasure, and stay till your spirit be in another condition to heare a relation which without doubt will redouble your grief. That stay will be unprofitable*, replyed Tiridates, *my resolution is already taken, and the condition neither of my grief nor life can be changed by your discourse.*

He uttered these few words with a very lamentable look and action, and *Arsanes* having in vain alledged some excuses to be dispensed withall from this sad narration, upon an absolute command disposed himself at last to obey him, *Tiridates* prepared himself for it with an apparent constancy, which caused admiration in *Marcellus*, and some despaire in *Arsanes* of qualifying his Master's spirit: and after that *Marcellus* melting with compassion at this deplorable adventure was fate downe by *Tiridates* to heare this sad narration, *Arsanes* with a great deale of paine began in these terms.

## *The History of* Mariamne.

I will relate to you, Sir, seeing you command me, and my evil destiny will have it so, the end of a great Queen, who was worthy of your affections, and the admiration of the whole earth: I will re-

count to you the particularities of it in a few words, as I have underſtood them (from ſuch of her domeſticks who beſt knew them) in *Jeruſalem*, where the Queen rendred up her ſoul two dayes before I arrived.

*Herod*'s humour and manner of life with *Mariamne* is ſufficiently known to you, Sir, and you have not forgotten in what condition you left her at your departure from *Judea* Jealouſie, to which he was inclined above all other men, tormented him at that time with very great violence, and during ſome dayes his rage expreſſed it ſelf by all the marks he could give it without coming to thoſe cruell extremities to which he was ſince tranſported: he complained highly of the Queen, whom he termed unfaithfull, and againſt whom he vomited out whatſoever his unjuſt paſſion could put into his mouth; and the wicked *Salome*, whoſe rage was augmented by your departure, and the ſcorn you made of her affections inſpired theſe reſentments into him as much as poſſibly ſhe could, and did not let ſlip any occaſion to exaſperate him more and more againſt the Queen, whom ſhe could onely accuſe of having robbed her of an heart to which ſhe pretended, but in vain.

This ſavage ſpirit being ſuſceptible of all bad impreſſions eaſily received what this wicked Sifter would have him; and in this rage to which he was immoderately abandoned, he continued divers dayes without ſeeing the Queen, or hearing her ſpoken of by them who out of a good zeal interpoſed for their reconciliation. *Mariamne* thought her ſelf never the more unhappy for this, and the

careſſes of this cruell man being as inſupportable as the effects of his choler, ſhe would have been contented to have continued in the ſame condition with him, if ſhe had not been accuſed to have drawn this diſgrace upon her ſelf by ſome action wherewith ſhe might be reproched, and whereby ſhe might ſeem to have deviated from that ſublime vertue to which ſhe had alwayes born ſo great a love.

The reſentments of *Herod* continued as long as poſſibly they could, but at laſt they gave place to his love; and he really bearing a very violent affection to the Queen his wife, by this force the indignation he had conceived againſt her was diſſipated, and he returned to her more kind and humble than before; he expreſſed his repentance for what was paſt, and conjured her to retain no memory of it, as he would forget the ſuſpicions which he had conceived againſt her fidelity. The Queen whatſoever repugnance ſhe had againſt the perſon and humour of *Herod*, did yet reſpect the character of an *Huſband*; and being full of a generous goodneſs, by the regret which he teſtified to her by very ſignificant expreſſions, ſhe was pacified, as ſhe believed it was her duty to be, and ſhe was reconciled unto him as far as the diſproportion of their manners, and the memory of the cruell injuries ſhe had received in the death of all her relations, would permit.

*Herod*'s mind was in ſome repoſe, and there were generall appearances enough of it in the Court, *Salome* only & thoſe ſhe had drawn to her party, even dyed with deſpight in the publick tranquillity, and could

could not endure peace in the Royal family, without having a cruell war in their hearts. *Herod* was continually with the Queen, and expreſſed to her the ſame ardency of affection as he did in the beginning of his paſſion: and by your abſence having loſt the object which might put him again in diſtruſt, he continued a long time without ſhewing any mark of jealouſie, onely the unwillingneſs of the Queen to endure his careſſes, cauſed ſometimes ſome diſorder between them: and as it was a difficult thing that this Princeſs ſhould keep her ſelf in an eternall conſtraint, and for a man whom ſhe had ſo many reaſons to hate, ſo ſhe could not chooſe ſometimes but receive him with coldneſs, and expreſs but little ſweetneſs or complacency to him.

*Herod*'s ſpirit was then tranſported with very violent exceſſes, and *Salome* ſeeing him in this condition, loſt no time nor occaſion to repreſent to him, that the diſdains of *Mariamne* proceeded from the memory of *Tiridates*, which abſence could not blot out of her mind. *Herod*'s jealouſy eaſily renewed it ſelf at this diſcourſe; and as long as he was tormented by it, he flew out into diſcourſes, and ſometimes into deſigns full of violence; but at length love returned more powerfull than *Salome*, and all that the ſolicitations of that wicked creature had raiſed againſt the innocent Queen, was overthrown by this predominant paſſion in *Herod*'s ſoul. In this ſort they paſſed a whole year, that one could not tell what to call their kind of life, peace, or open war; and poſſibly they might have lived a longer time in this manner, if the deſtiny of this fair Princeſs had not been haſtened by a terrible diſaſter..

*Herod*

*Herod* having one day ſent to intreat the Queen to come into his chamber, ſhe, whether ſhe were buſie about ſomething which was more dear to her than the ſight of that cruell man, or whether ſhe were then in the height of averſeneſſe from him, as the memory of the injuries ſhe had received renewed in her mind, refuſed divers times to go; and at laſt being extraordinarily preſſed to it, ſhe diſpoſed her ſelf to render him this viſit, but ſhe did it with a countenance, whereupon *Herod* might eaſily read the repugnance ſhe had to give him this ſatisfaction. *Herod* upon this diſcovery being netled with a violent diſpleaſure, could not diſſemble it any more than ſhe, & greeting her with a diſcontented look: *I am very ſorry Madam,* ſaid he, *that you are obliged by any law to offer that violence to your ſelf that you do: and if I had not this violent paſſion for you, which by your bad uſage you endeavour to baniſh out of my ſoul as much as you can poſſible, I ſhould leſſe often give you the trouble of ſeeing an Husband, which by his misfortune is become ſo odious to you.*

The Queen was little troubled at *Herod*'s words, and looking upon him with a diſdainfull eye: *I hate you not,* anſwered ſhe, *the God whom we ſerve, and my duty forbid that: but you may well imagine that my affections could not be ſtrengthened towards you by ſuch bloody diſpleaſures as you have done me. Ah ungrateſull woman,* replyed the Jewiſh King, *proud, cruell, and irreconcileable ſpirit, wilt thou never put an end to thy unjuſt reproches, wilt thou eternally ſerve thy ſelf with the pretence of injuries and diſpleaſures, to palliate the naturall averſion thou haſt againſt thy husband? Though I had received this averſion,* anſwered

ſwered the Qu. *from my nature, I ſhould have known how to have bridled it by my duty, and I ſhould have reduced my ſpirit to fit termes of ſubmiſſion to an huſband, if in ſtead of my huſband he were not become the murtherer of all my friends, and my particular perſecutor. Ah!* replyed *Herod, you are to blame to complain of my perſecutions, and hitherto I have not perſecuted you, but with too much love: 'tis for that you may really reproch me; and though you had ſome reaſon to accuſe me for the misfortune of your friends, yet by the ardent teſtimonies of my love which I give you every moment of my life, theſe reſentments would have been effaced out of any ſpirit but yours. Ah! What teſtimonies*, anſwered *Mariamne, what teſtimonies do you give me of your love, which may endeare me more than thoſe actions, whereby you have rendred me the moſt unfortunate of all women? What teſtimonies?* replyed *Herod; can you be ignorant of them, ungrateful and unacknowledging Woman? have you your eyes onely open to injuries, and will you eternally keep them ſhut againſt all the proofs of this violent paſſion, whereby I have loſt the repoſe of my life? Doe not you remember that for you alone I abandon the care of my Subjects, and of my own perſon, which by your ingratitude you expoſe every day to the extremities of grief?*

The Queen not able to diſſemble her thoughts in this rancounter, and by too prompt a precipitation loſing part of that prudent precaution which ſhe had hitherto uſed in the conduct of her life: *You forget*, ſaid ſhe in a diſdainfull manner, *to put me in mind of the moſt important proofs of your love, and you would not have me know the obligations I have*

*to*

*to you for the care you had of my ſafety in the voyages you made to* Laodicea *and to* Rhodes, *to* Anthony, *and to* Auguſtus. *It is certain,* anſwered *Herod*, who at firſt did not apprehend the reproch ſhe would make him, *that in ſpight of your cruelty nothing was ſo ſenſible and ſo inſupportable to me in thoſe voyages as the regret of being abſent from you, and that they who ſaw me in that time of abſence, obſerved ſufficiently in all my actions that I was ſeparated from the better part of my ſelf. It was for this reaſon,* added the Queen, *that in both the voyages you gave ſuch exellent orders, firſt to* Joſeph, *and afterwards to* Sohemus, *for the conſervation of my life, and this part of your ſelf was ſo dear to you, that you were not willing that death it ſelf ſhould ſeparate you from it.*

At theſe words *Herod* ſeemed to be ſtruck with a thunderbolt, and inſtantly calling to minde the orders he had really given to *Joſeph* and *Sohemus* for the death of *Mariamne*, he preſently underſtood this reproch. He had hitherto believed that ſhe was ignorant of this effect of his cruelty, and he had ſo ordered the ſecret to thoſe whom he had choſen for the miniſters of his cruell intentions, that he could not imagine that for any conſideration they could ever reſolve to diſcover it: but contrary to his expectation receiving this knowledge of the contrary, and not being able to diſſemble to the Queen this horrible effect of his jealouſy, he continued confounded and amazed, expreſſing the motions of his ſoul by his ſilence, and by the aſtoniſhment which appeared in his viſage. The ſhame of ſeeing his villany diſcovered to that perſon of the world who ſhould have been moſt ignorant

ignorant of it, was the firſt paſſion which poſſeſſed him, and which made him hold his eyes fixed upon the earth, without daring to raiſe them to the face of the ſo juſtly offended Queen: then he thought upon the ill office he had received from his ſubjects, and ſighed with grief for the infidelity of thoſe in whom he moſt confided: and in fine, having an outragious ſpirit, and capable, by what he perceived in himſelf, to entertain the ſtrangeſt thoughts, he imagined that *Joſeph* and *Sohemus* could not have betrayed the confidence he had in them, nor have failed in their duty to him, both in regard of their birth and the benefits they had received of him, but for the love of *Mariamne.*

This thought which threw it ſelf with violence into his ſoul, found as much room there to eſtabliſh it ſelf as could be; and he knowing the powers of *Mariamne* by the daily proof he made of them, made no further doubt but that by them alone the fidelity of *Joſeph* and *Sohemus* was ſtaggered. Jealouſie, that furious paſſion, to which he naturally had ſo much inclination, poſſeſſed it ſelf incontinently of his ſoul, and as in a place taken by aſſault, it preſently ſet all on fire: the blackeſt ſuſpicions he could conceive of the vertue of *Mariamne*, preſented themſelves to his imagination, and the proofs he had received of it upon ſo many occaſions, could not in this laſt defend it from the criminall impreſſions which eſtabliſhed themſelves in his ſoul. *Ah!* cryed he all in a rage, *I am betrayed, I am undone, both heaven and earth abandon me, and all thoſe whom I thought worthy of my friendſhip and my confidence, ingratefully unite themſelves to ruine me: Ah!*

*envious*

*envious Heaven! ah disloyall Wife! ah ingratefull and perfidious Servants! to what extremities doe you reduce me?*

After these first words he continued some while without speaking, revolving in his mind a thousand furious resolutions, and walking in the chamber with an action full of fury and transport. The constant Queen who saw him in this condition, was little moved at the expressions of his choler; but she repented she had spoken so much, and that by her discourse she had exposed to the rage of this cruell man, those whose ruine she foresaw already; she would have remedied it if it had been possible for her, but she could not revoke what she had said: and considering with her self which way to avert the tempest which hung over their heads and threatned them, she continued in silence not without some confusednes, which confirmed the jealous King in his unworthy imaginations.

After he had continued a while in this condition, he approched the Queen with a pale and disfigured countenance, and viewing her with a furious eye from head to foot: *Those which told thee of my intentions*, said he to her, *told thee but the truth; and it imports me nothing to deny it, that out of a violent excesse of love I would not have left thee after my death, either to thy friends or to my enemies: yes, my designe was not to be separated from thee by death it self, and I should have been too happy if I had performed in my life time what I had commanded to be done after my death. Those perfidious persons who have betrayed me, have told thee nothing but the plain truth, but they did not dispose themselves to deceive the confi-*

dence

*dence I had in their friendſhip, and expoſe themſelves to the puniſhments which are due to their infidelity, but upon ſome powerfull conſideration; thou haſt without doubt propoſed a recompence to them which hath made them deſpiſe what they could expect from me, and not feare that death which they affronted in betraying me. It was not by a preſent of ſmall price that thou haſt corrupted thoſe perſons which had always been moſt faithfull to me, and* Joſeph *who is one of the moſt eminent ranks in* Judea, *as being my neer ally, and* Soheмus, *whom by my bounty I had put into a condition not to aſpire to riches by ſo dangerous a treaſon, could not have been ſeduced by any power inferiour to thy beauty: theſe are the charmes which have gained them, and thy favours onely have made them contemne the dangers which might divert them from their treaſons.*

*Herod* pronounced theſe words with an impetuoſity which ſufficiently expreſſed the cruell agitation of his ſoul, and the Queen having hearkned to him with an admirable patience: *Say what thou will,* ſaid ſhe to him, *againſt a perſon who is no longer in a condition to receive new offences either by thy actions or by thy diſcourſe; God hath diſcovered to me the fatall orders which thou gaveſt againſt my life by other wayes than thou imagineſt; and theſe whom thou ſuſpecteſt to have revealed thy ſecret, are not they by whom thy cruell intentions are made known unto me. This is thy cuſtome,* replyed *Herod*, crying out more than before, *to excuſe thy lovers in the bloody outrages they do me, and thou takeſt care of their life, who never hadſt any care of thy huſbands repoſe, or thine own reputation. Thou wouldſt have rendred the like office*

to

*to the perfidious* Tiridates; *and those favours which thou hadst prodigally bestowed upon a barbarous Prince, are since communicated to my allies, and descended to my domestiques. This is the high spirit, this is that pride which hitherto hath made part of our divisions; and the haughty blood of the* Asmoneans, *which disdained a King her husband, hath debased it self even to* Sohemus.

In conclusion he gave her a thousand reproches full of injuries, against which the Queen did not vouchsafe to justifie her self; but onely looking upon him with more disdain than before: *Thou may'st believe,* said she, *whatsoever thy rage can inspire thee with against me: the outragious reproches which thou layest upon me shew the basenesse of thy soule, and of thy birth, and I scorn thee too much to take any care to defend my self against thy unworthy accusations. Thy care would be but in vain,* replyed the Jewish King, *and thou mayest reserve thy justifications for the defence of a life which I have spared but too long: the time is come that I will mock at thy scorn, and thy infidelities shall be punished: that love which hitherto hath guarded thee against my too just resentments shall no longer oppose it self against my justice: and I have lost that fatall passion which created all my misfortunes, since I have discovered amongst thy lovers the basest of my domestiques; they shall pay me part of the offences they have done me by their blood, and torments shall draw such verities out of their mouths, as shall make thy shame and perfidiousnesse appear to the world.*

Having spoken these words, to which the Queen had not time, nor possibly any design, to reply, he

he called the Officers of his guard, and commanded them upon pain of death to conduct the Queen preſently to the priſon to which they were wont to commit perſons of quality. The Queen ſubmitted to this command with leſſe repugnance than ſhe had to come into his chamber, and ſhe followed the Officers whither they would have her, without ſpeaking a word, or changing countenance.

At the ſame time he ſent other Officers to ſeize upon *Joſeph* and *Sohemus*; and though the former had married his Aunt, and was of a conſiderable ranke amongſt the Jewes, yet he uſed him with no more gentleneſſe than *Sohemus*, but ſent them both into ſeverall parts of the priſon. He had hardly given theſe orders, but the wicked *Salome* having learned by her ſpies, whom ſhe had ordinarily about him, part of what had paſſed, came to ſee him in his chamber, where ſhe found him in the violent agitations of rage and tranſport. He no ſooner ſaw her, but coming to her with a diſfigured countenance: *Siſter*, ſaid he, *I am very ſorry that I did not follow your counſell long ſince: and I had freed my ſelf of thoſe mortall diſpleaſures which torment me, if I had not ſuffered my ſelf to be ſo much blinded with the love of this woman, which heaven hath given me for the ſcourge and plague of my life. 'Tis not onely upon* Tiridates *that this ungratefull woman beſtowes her affections, ſhe deſcends to* Jewes *of a much inferiour birth than that barbarous Prince, and at laſt debaſes her ſelf even to my domeſtiques.*

*Salome* made as if ſhe were amazed at this diſcourſe, and by a miſchievous and dangerous addreſſe, whereby ſhe gave more roome and credit

to her artifices, she fained at first as if she would have excused the Queen, and not have given credit to so apparent accusations. *Herod*, who though prudent and subtile in all other things, had incredible weaknesses in things of this nature, fell into the snare which she laid for him; and opposing her seemingly officious humour with the testimonies which he believed he had of *Mariamnes* infidelity, he related to her with a discourse full of vehemence and impetuosity, what had passed at this last visit that she had rendred him; he confessed to her that upon the knowledge he had of *Anthonie's* amorous inclinations, and the advice he had received, that *Gallus* had carried the pourtraicture of *Mariamne* to that Prince to make him affect her; at his departure to go to him at *Laodicea*, he commanded *Joseph*, if he dyed in this voyage, to put *Mariamne* to death, not being willing that she should survive him to enjoy with *Anthony* the fruit of a death, which possibly she might have procured him; and that upon the same consideration he had given the same order to *Sohemus*, when he went to *Rhodes*, to appeare before *Augustus*, but that he had recommended the secret to them both in such a manner, and had engaged them besides to the fidelity which they owed him by so many benefits, that *Mariamne* could not have perverted them but by favours exceeding his, and by proofes of affection, which made them both despise the friendship of their King, and death which they might infallibly expect for betraying him.

*Salome* shrank her shoulders at this discourse, and faining to be of the Kings mind against her will: It

*is very difficult,* ſaid ſhe, *to guard one's ſelf from the misfortunes which it pleaſes Heaven to ſend us, and principally in things ſo little foreſeen, and ſo farre from appearance. I never doubted but that* Mariamne *loved* Tiridates, *but I ſhould not have believed that ſhe had fallen ſo low as* Sohemus, *if in the diſcourſe you have made me I did not ſee proofes ſufficiently convincing. Ah diſloyall woman* continued ſhe, after ſhe had kept ſilence a while: *Who would have imagined, that ſhe being ſo poſſeſſed with pride ſhould have had baſeneſſe enough too to beſtow her affections upon Sohemus.* She continued after theſe words ſome moments without ſpeaking, with counterfeit ſignes of amazement and ſorrow; then on a ſuddain beginning again: *Sir,* ſaid ſhe, *you have too much courage to ſuffer your ſelf to be overcome by affliction; and if you take counſell of perſons who are really faithfull to you, and allyed to you in blood or by ancient affection you will not ſuffer this proud and diſloyall woman to enjoy the glory of having reduced you to the extremity of griefe. Diſpleaſures of this nature ought not to overthrow your repoſe with ſo much violence, and the offence you have received in your honour, is not ſuch but that you may eaſily remedy it: Strip your ſelf onely of this love, which creates all the misfortunes of your life, and makes you blind to your moſt powerfull intereſts, and darkens the light of your underſtanding: draw out by the meanes you have to do it, the full diſcovery of the treaſon they have committed againſt you, puniſh the culpable which expoſe you to ſuch bloody diſpleaſures, and in fine make her ſubmit to your juſtice, whom you could never make ſubmit to your love. I am ſo reſolved upon it,* ſaid Herod to

her, *that all humane considerations shall not be able to hinder me from it; and since* Mariamne *hath not been affraid to reduce me to the extremity of shame and displeasure, I will not be more affraid to make my uttermost resentments appeare against her, than if she were one of my meanest subjects. This is a resolution from which nothing shall be able to move me, and you shall see me go about it without farther delay.*

They had likewise other discourse together, which was related by persons who were neere enough to heare them, though the little importance of it hinders me from relating it to you. By the counsell of *Salome*, before she went out of the chamber, *Herod*, sent likewise to lay hold on *Philon* the Queen's chiefe Eunuch, and some other persons in whom she had expressed to have some confidence: all presently became suspected to this cruell man, and he disposed himself by the advice of his cruell sister, and *Pheroras*, who came a little after, and was received for a third person in this Tragicall conversation, to extort confessions by torments from those feeble soules, wherein they might find an apparent occasion to destroy this vertuous Princesse.

*Ah monster!* cryed out *Tiridates* at this part of *Arsanes* his discourse, *Ah barbarian! how unworthy wert thou of that precious gift of heaven, which any but a Tygre like thy self would have had in sacred veneration all his life? It must needs be that the indignation of the God which thou servist was absolutely declared against this Royall family, from which thou hast usurped the Crown with so much injustice and cruelty:*

*and*

*and it muſt needs be that the divine providence was aſleep, when it abandoned to thy Rage, the greateſt, and the moſt worthy thing of its protection, that ever it ſent amongſt men.* *Tiridates* accompanied theſe words with many ſobs, which hindred him from ſpeaking more: and *Arſanes* having taken this moment of intermiſſion, purſued thus his diſcourſe.

It will not be eaſy to expreſſe to you how the whole Court of *Judea* took the diſgrace of their faire Queen, and what the reſentments of the *Jewiſh* people were, when they ſaw the laſt and faireſt blood of their lawfull Kings ready to be ſhed by the ſame cruelty which had been the deſtruction of all their Princes: the chiefeſt of them murmured highly at it, the weaker ſort did tacitely deplore the diſaſters of that illuſtrious Houſe; and both together ſacrificed their teares to perſecuted *Vertue* and *Innocence*.

*Herod*, the moſt politick of men, deſiring to cover all his actions with a maſque of juſtice, whether it were that he feared *Auguſtus* his authority, who (maugre the amity and protection he had promiſed him) made him tremble every day, or that he feared an inſurrection of an ill-affected people; appointed Judges for *Mariamne* to interrogate her upon ſuch accuſations as he ſhould produce againſt her, and to frame her proceſſe after the ordinary way. The men to whom he gave this commiſſion were in appearance without paſſion, but really corrupted by *Salome*, and obliged to comply with the motions of their Prince by a baſe and diſhonourable intereſt. They received command to go and examine the Queen in the priſon: and when they were

ready to go upon the design; *Herod*, whether it were that he distrusted them, or that he was spurred on by an extraordinary animosity, or on the contrary touched with some remains of love, which still resisted his resentments, would follow them secretly in this action, and stand behind a door, from whence, without being discovered, he might hear their examinations, and *Mariamne*'s answers.

This curiosity was inspired into him by Heaven, which for the safety of the Queen would serve it self with the love which he really bare her. He being absolute in his commands, the businesse was executed according to his will, and having thrown an old cloak about him which disguised him in part, he went along with the Judges to the prison where the Queen was, and stood behind her chamber door, which they left a little open to favour his design.

*Mariamne*, as it was afterwards reported, saw those who were appointed to be her Judges, enter her chamber, without shewing any sign of astonishment, and was no more moved at their sight, than at one of her inferiour servants: they rendred her the honour which they believed due to her in this occasion, & in fine, one of them named *Joab* speaking for himself and his companions, declared to her their commission, and humbly beseeched her to be pleased, that, according to the order he had received of the King for it, he might examine her upon some accusations which were made against her.

The constant Queen patiently hearkned to *Joab*'s discourse, & when he had done speaking, looking upon

on him with diſdain, & a ſmile, which, though mingled with a little ſharpneſs, ſhewed the undauntedneſs and tranquillity of her ſpirit: *I have not learned,* ſaid ſhe, *that Princeſſes of my birth, or rather Queens and lawfull Heirs of* Judea, *acknowledged ſuch perſons as* Joab *for their Judges: and he which gave you this power hath not received enough himſelf from heaven to make my ſpirit bow to ſo baſe a ſubmiſſion: I can anſwer before God for all the actions of my life, and by his grace they are innocent enough to be confeſſed to the whole world; but it is to him alone that I ought to render an account, and by my birth I have been and ſtill am of ſuch a quality as doth not permit me to look upon as my Judges, thoſe which were born ſubjects to my anceſtors and my ſelf.*

*We have rendred,* replyed the Jew, *what we owed to your birth and quality, as long as it hath pleaſed the King to permit us, & We have not ſought an employment which yet we could not refuſe, when he was pleaſed to lay it upon us; but ſeeing that by his abſolute Will we have been appointed to it, and that the authority which you have had over us, ought to ſubmit to his, you will not finde it ſtrange, if it pleaſe you, that We examine you upon the accuſations which he himſelf layes againſt you. I ſhall account nothing ſtrange,* anſwered *Mariamne, neither from you nor from him who gave you this commiſſion; but by all his authority you ſhall not oblige me to anſwer before any other Judge, than before his* Soveraign Maſter *and mine, and before him, who for the puniſhment of my fault hath expoſed me to the cruelty of a man, whom he hath pleaſed to give me for an Huſband. Beſides, theſe formalities are no whit neceſſary to him for my deſtruction, and he hath need of no other*

*than those wherewith he served himself in the death of* Hyrcanus *and* Aristobulus. *It is not that I feare the judgement of men, if I should submit to it, or that I cannot declare before the face of Heaven, that my innocence is pure and cleare from all that can touch it. The just resentments, which I have against him, never gave me the liberty of one single thought wherewith he might be offended; and if the blood of a Grandfather, a Brother, and of so many other of my friends, which he hath sacrificed to his ambition, hath extinguished part of that ardent affection which an Husband lesse cruell might have found in a Wife lesse unfortunate; yet it hath not defaced the character engraved by the hand of God, whereby We are united untill death, neither hath it ever inspired me with one singl: wish against his honour, or the repose of his life.*

The fair and vertuous Queen pronounced these words with so much courage, grace, and majesty, that her Judges remained surprized with ravishment and admiration; and *Herod*, who from the place where he was hid had intelligibly heard them, was touched with them in such a sort, that all his resentments were not capable to resist the motions of his love, which raised themselves against them with their former power, and thrusting at the door which was half open, he entred into the chamber, and discovered himself to *Mariamne*: *No Madam*, cryed he, as he drew neer her; *no Madam, you shall not be judged but by your own conscience, that may possibly convince you of little love to your husband; but all other crimes, whereof I suspected you, are blotted out of my mind by the love I beare you. In fine, whether you be criminall or innocent, you can neither be condemned,*

nor

*nor abſolved, but I muſt ſubmit with you to the judgment which ſhall be pronounced either for you or againſt you; and my heart, which takes your part againſt it ſelf, would be the firſt expoſed to the diſpleaſures which too unjuſt a rigour prepared for you.*

*Herod* expreſſed himſelf in this manner: and *Mariamne*, though ſhe were a little ſurprized at his unexpected ſight, appeared nevertheleſſe little moved at his approch and diſcourſe: or if ſhe were, it was onely with choler and diſdain at the preſence of a man from whom ſhe had lately received ſo unworthy uſage. In effect, the injury ſhe had ſuffered in ſeeing her ſelf preſſed to anſwer before her ſubjects, who were appointed as Judges of her honour and her life, though it were not capable to make her exceed the bounds of moderation, and be outragious in the abſence of her husband, contrary to what ſhe believed was due to the tye which united them, appeared to her underſtanding in another form, when ſhe ſaw before her the cruell man by whom ſhe was expoſed to this ignominy: this laſt affront, and condition wherein ſhe ſaw her ſelf in an hard and rigorous priſon, being joyned to the memory of her former diſpleaſures, revived her reſentments with a more than ordinary violence, and permitted her not to look upon *Herod* but as a *Dragon* coming to devour her: ſhe received his careſſes themſelves ſo little conformable to the uſage whereof ſhe ſaw the preparation ſtill before her eyes, for the effects of a black diſſimulation, whereof ſhe knew him more capable than all other men all his life long: and in fine, the averſion ſhe had contracted from what was paſt, being joyned to

theſe

these new ſubjects of hatred made *Herod* more odious and more diſdaineable than ever he appeared to her before.

She looked upon him with an Eye full of ſcorne and indignation, and flying from his armes which he reached towards her: *Suffer cruel man*, ſaid ſhe, *ſuffer thy juſtice to take its courſe: the faces of the Judges, which thou haſt appointed me, are more ſupportable than thine to me: and I had rather undergoe the bloody Sentence, which by thy orders they ſhall pronounce againſt me, than receive any more thy artificiall careſſes: if thou preſenteſt thy ſelf to me to augment the pain to which thou haſt deſtined me, thou exceedeſt the limits of all cruelty, and the ſeveriſt enemies have not aggravated by their preſence the laſt ſufferings of thoſe they had condemned to dy. Ah! Mariamne* replyed the *Jewiſh King*, with a very paſſionate action, *I come not hither to ſend thee to thy death; ſeeing thou canſt not be condemned but by a ſentence, which will be as deſtructive to me as to thy ſelf; I come rather to ſnatch thee from the rigour of thoſe, whom by too prompt a reſentment I have armed againſt my own life rather than thine: I come to let thee know that thou canſt not dy without* Herod, *and to tell thee that ſeeing thou haſt ſome reſpects left to that ty which ought to unite us untill death, thou canſt not diſdain the life I come to offer thee, without making an attempt upon thy husbands life.*

*And what favour*, anſwered the Queen, interrupting him, *what favour doeſt thou believe thou doeſt me in leaving me a life, which by thy cruelties thou haſt rendred more odious to me a thouſand times, than the death which thou haſt prepared for me? what puniſh-*

*ments*

*ments are due to this innocent life of mine, if thine contaminated with ſo many crimes hath hitherto eſcaped the indignation of heaven, and whatſoever mine be, by what right wouldſt thou have me beholding to thee for it; ſince thou haſt no other right to diſpoſe of it but by uſurpation and tyranny?*

Theſe words began to rekindle *Herod*'s anger, and looking upon the Queen with eyes troubled with the motions of his different paſſions: *Cruell woman*, ſaid he, *the inhumanities wherewith thou reprocheſt me every moment, are not comparable to thine; and by the continuall outrages which thou doſt me thou endeavoureſt to provoke my love, and ſtraine my patience to the uttermoſt extremities: thoſe inclinations which I have not been able to overcome, what cauſe ſo ever I had to oppoſe them, ſtill take thy part, and repreſent to me that without highly injuring my ſelf firſt, I cannot execute my juſt reſentments againſt thee: I conjure thee to abuſe them no longer, nor conſtraine an husband who loves thee too well, to abandon thee to the rigours of juſtice, which will bring us both to our graves.*

He pronounced theſe words with a very terrible geſture; but the Queen was not affrighted at it, but looking upon him with more diſdain than before: *Neither thy threats*, ſaid ſhe, *nor thy careſſes ſhall ever move me, and thy threatnings are more deare to me than the proteſtations of thy love: thou doſt more naturally act this latter part than the former; and there is no neceſſity for thee to conſtrain thy ſelf for a perſon, to whom the death which ſhe expects from thy cruelty, will be a thouſand times more pleaſing than all the proofes of thy affection.*

Thou

*Thou ſhalt dy then, ſince ti's thy Will,* cryed *Herod* full of fury and tranſport, *thou ſhalt dy, woman unworthy of the care I took of thy ſafety, unworthy of my love, and now devoted to the juſtice of a King, and an Huſband, who hath been injured in the moſt ſenſible part: I was too weake to intereſſe my ſelf in the conſervation of thy life; but now thou haſt nothing to ground any hope of it upon, but onely thy juſtification, and the evident proofes of thy innocence.* My friends, continued he, turning himſelf towards them to whom he had given commiſsion to be her Judges, *perform now your charge with all liberty, and do not any longer look upon this woman as the ſpouſe of your King; but as a woman which hath baſely and ſhamefully violated her duty to the Law of God, her own honour, and her huſbands love.*

Having ſpoken theſe words, he went out of the chamber, ſo terrible, that he made all he met in his paſſage tremble for feare. Onely *Mariamne* ſeemed little moved at it; and when the Judges according to *Herod*'s laſt command would have examined her, ſhe did not vouchſafe to open her mouth, but onely to pray them to be gone, and leave her in quiet. *Herod* was no ſooner returned to his lodgings, but he was viſited by *Salome* and *Pheroras*, and he had no ſooner told them that, which he called the laſt effect of his weakneſſe, and the laſt proofes he had received of *Mariamnes* inflexibility, but the revengefull *Salome* and *Pheroras*, being intereſſed by the envy they had alwayes born to the authority of *Mariamne*, after they had a long time blamed him for the action he had lately done, as ill beſeeming his dignity, and being contrary

trary to all the lawes of prudence, they repreſented to him as vehemently as they could, that he ought no longer to be negligent; and that if he left ſo obſtinate an enemy any longer in the world, ſhe would infallibly attempt againſt his life, what ſhe had already attempted. and poſsibly executed againſt his honour.

*Herod* drunk with rage, gave ear to them but too patiently; and when he had underſtood that the Queen had refuſed to anſwer thoſe who had the charge to examine her, and that they were gone out of the priſon without getting one word from her, by the pernicious counſell of *Salome*, he commanded to put *Schemus* and the Eunuch *Philon* to the torture, with order to omit no kind of torment to draw out of their mouths a confeſſion capable to condemn the Queen with ſome form of juſtice. *Joſeph* in regard of his birth was not expoſed to the rack, but *Herod* in an haſty rage ſent executioners that ſtrangled him the ſame day in the priſon, though he were not convinced of any crime, but of having revealed his Maſter's ſecret to *Mariamne*. This ſuddain execution would have amazed the *Jews*, if they had not been uſed to ſee ſuch actions proceed from their King every day, and if they had not known too well that death was familiar with him upon the leaſt motion of his paſſions.

The Princeſſe *Alexandra* moved at the misfortune of her daughter, as in all likelihood ſhe ought to be, uſed all means for her juſtification, but ſhe had not *Herod*'s ear, which her enemies had poſſeſſed; and by all the power ſhe had over her daughter ſhe could never oblige her to take any care to

verify

verify her innocence, or to be reconciled to her husband. All the world believed that it had been still in her power, if she had been but willing to have endeavoured it, and as resolute as she was not to seek the friendship of this cruell man, he would never possibly have consented to her death, if the things which happened afterwards had not cruelly contributed unto it. "I am very unwilling, "Sir, *pursued* Arsanes, *looking pitifully upon* Tiri- "dates, to let you know the part you have in the "death of this great Princess, and if I could with- "out disobeying you, and without varying from "the truth which you will understand from other "mouths, I would spare you the displeasure you "may receive from thence. Make an end, *said* Ti- "ridates *with a deadly look*, my grief is not in a con- "dition to receive any augmentation by the parti- "cularities of thy discourse; and since *Mari-* "*amne* is gone out of the world, the wayes where- "by she went cannot at all change my condition.

"I will tell you then, since it is your plea- "sure; *pursued Arsanes*, that before they put "*Sohemus* and the *Eunuch Philon* to the tor- "ment, *Salome* gave expres order to those "who had the charge of the business, to examine "them and presse them by torments, upon what "had passed betwixt the Queen and Prince *Tirida-* "*tes*, believing that if she could represent that a "little to *Herod's* memory, she should carry him to "any thing she would desire. Her orders were punctually executed, and the two men were fear- fully tormented; but whatsoever they made *Soho-* *mus* suffer to make him reveal the favours which they

they pretended he had received of the Queen, whereby he had been obliged to betray his Maſter's ſecret, they could not draw one word out of his mouth, but what tended to the glory and advantage of *Mariamne*. He confeſſed that out of weakneſs, or out of compaſsion which he had of the miſeries of that Princeſs, he had permitted himſelf ſo far as to diſcover to her the cruell orders which *Herod* had given him, and that he never intended to put them in execution; but when they queſtioned him concerning his or *Joſeph's* love to the Queene, he denyed it to them with ſo much conſtancy, and anſwered them with ſo much candor and reſolution, that they eaſily judged both the Queen and himſelf to be innocent by his anſwers.

The Eunuch, though inferiour to him in ſtrength of body and courage, endured the firſt torments with reſolution enough; and having nothing to ſay of the Queen to this purpoſe, but what ſerved for her juſtification, he kept to the naked truth, whatſoever pains they made him ſuffer; but at laſt being examined upon what had paſs'd between the Queen and *Tiridates*; and the torments being renewed with more cruelty than before upon the ſolicitation of *Salome*, he was not able any longer to reſiſt them, but ſaid to thoſe which tormented him, that if they would give him a little reſpite, he would declare all he knew concerning that buſineſs.

The torments being ceaſed, and thoſe to whom this execution was appointed, being come neer to him, he told them that during *Herod's* voyage to *Rhodes*, *Tiridates* had ſeen the Queen by night,

and

and in a disguise in the Castle, where she was kept under the costody of *Soheimus*; and that upon the night of that day whereon he was besieged by *Herod* in the Temple, and saved by the interposition of *Sosius*, he came back alone to *Hierusalem* into the Palace, into the chamber of *Cleophe*, where by his own means he had seen the Queen secretly, and had some time of conversation with her.

The cruell *Salome* transported with joy at this confession, caused his torments to be redoubled, to make him confess more; and by this news which she carried to *Herod*, she wounded him to the very heart. He made such exclamations as testified his grief, and he abandoned himself in all things to transport and fury, finding, as he thought, more truth in the accusations they made against *Mariamne*, than he had desired; he felt himself violently seized upon by a displeasure which all his prudence and policy could not dissemble. *Salome* thought it best to represent to him that he ought not to suffer himself to fall into such violent passions for an ingratefull and perfidious woman: he had no ears to hear her consolations as he had to hear her counsells, and flying out into the excess of rage at every moment: *Bestow*, said he to her, *thy unprofitable comforts elsewhere, and let my grief perform the most agreeable effect that ever it could produce: I know that* Mariamne *is ingratefull, that* Mariamne *hath betrayed me, and that* Mariamne *must perish: but I know likewise, that I cannot destroy what I have so dearly loved, without devoting my selfe to death.* Mariamne *shall dye without doubt, if the accusation of the Eunuch be true, and if her disloyalty prove true, I will*

*no longer hearken to what love ſhall alledge in her favour: but this is infallible, that* Mariamne *cannot dye without bringing me to the grave, or if I remain in the world after her, it will onely be to paſſe my dayes in dreadfull horrours.*

Whileſt he thus tormented himſelf they redoubled the poor Eunuch's tortures; but if he had weakneſſe enough to declare what he knew, he had not ſo much villany as to invent any thing againſt the Queenes innocence; ſo that the executioners being weary of tormenting him, were conſtrained to leave him at repoſe. Preſently after, *Salome* ſent them to *Sohemus*, to whom they propoſed the ſame interrogatories: he reſiſted the cruelty of theſe tortures much longer than the Eunuch had done; but when they preſſed him upon *Philon's* depoſition, he varied a little in his anſwers; and the Eunuch being brought before him, and having maintained what he had depoſed in his preſence, the unfortunate *Sohemus* not being able any longer to reſiſt the truth, and perceiving well that all his evaſions would be uſeleſſe after the Eunuch's depoſition, which he could no longer contradict lifting pittifully his eyes to heaven; *I plainly ſee*, ſaid he, *that I muſt dy; and by the compaſſion which I have had of the misfortunes of a great Princeſſe, I ſee my ſelf brought to my end: God is my witneſſe that I little regret the loſſe of my life; but I cannot have any comfort in my death if by our weakneſſe we advance the loſſe of the moſt vertuous and innocent Queen that ever was. She without doubt hath haſtened* Joſeph's *death and mine by the diſcourſe ſhe hath made to the King her huſband, but all the reſentment I might have*

*for that, nor the horrour of all the torments that can present me with shall never make me speake against the knowledge I have of her innocence, and admirable vertue.*

After this discourse seeing himself pressed strest by torments, he confirmed the deposition of the Eunuch, as to the two interviews of the Queen and Prince *Tiridates* in the Castle where he had her under his custody, and in the Queenes lodging at your departure from *Hierusalem*; but in his confession he excused the Queen, as his conscience obliged him to doe, and protested with oaths sacred to the *Jewes*, that as for the first interview in the Castle, it was totally without the Queenes knowledge, who forced you away from thence, without ever granting you the liberty to returne; and for the last, the Queen onely consented to it to intreat you never to see her more: and that both in the one and the other there was so much innocence and reservednesse, that *Herod* himself, if he had been there present, could have found no cause of complaint in the most criminall passage of it. *Alas!* cryed *Tiridates* at this passage, *with how much truth, Sohemus, mightest thou protest this; and how advantageous had it been for that innocent Princesse, had* Herod *himself received with his own eares those testimonies of her vertue?*

Whatsoever misery they made *Sohemus* suffer, after this confession, pursued *Arsanes*, they could get no more out of his mouth, and this was enough for the destruction of the unfortunate *Mariamne*. *Herod* no sooner understood the unhappy confirmation of the Eunuch's deposition, but he totally aban-

abandoned himself to his rage: and whether it were that he suspected something more particularly offensive to himself in these secret interviews, or that he found in this discovery occasion enough to condemne her, letting loose the reines to the impetuosity of his jealousy: *Let her dye*, cryed he, addressing himself to *Salome*, *Pheroras*, and his Ministers of Justice, to whom he was accustomed to commit the like employments; *let her dye disloyall woman as she is, let her dye like an adulteresse as she is, take her, rid her out of the world without any farther delay.*

I know not whether *Herod* pronounced this sentence with a perfect deliberation, or whether he thought he should find not so ready obedience to a command made with too much precipitation; but however it was, he had hardly spoken, but the enemies of *Mariamne* to whom by the rigor of her destiny he unluckily addressed himself, ran or rather flew to hasten the end of her dayes.

*Herod* out of the excesse of his grief, or rather of his rage, had thrown himself upon his bed, where making more reflection upon the injury he supposed he had received from *Mariamne*, than upon the bloudy orders he lately given against her, entombed himselfe in such sorrow as rendred him incapable of dreaming upon what past.

*Salome*, who was wholly devoid of pity and her party, taking their time for the execution of their cruell intentions, employed it with so much heat and eagernesse, that the same day all things were prepared for the death of that deplorable Princesse, and they went into the prison to give her notice of

it, and to conduct her to it. They did not so much as give the Princesse *Alexandria* her mother time to bid her adieu; neither did they permit her faithfull servants, and those whom she had loved best, to take their last leave of her: nor had she the liberty to take the last sight of the children she left in the world, of so tender an age that they were not yet capable to understand the losse they received.

Her cruell enemies fearing lest that *Herod* should return to his righte mind, and making a rationall reflection upon what was done, should recall the inhumane sentence which he had pronounced, hastened all things against all formes, and gave no time to love and reason to produce the effects they feared. Poore *Sohemus* and the miserable *Eunuch* were first sacrificed, and *Salome* sent executioners to strangle them in the prison. They say *Sohemus* dyed like a man of courage, and protested the *Queenes* vertue and innocence to his last gaspe, for whose death he expressed more sorrow, then for his own.

Those which went into the prison to the Queen to prepare her to dy, reported afterwards, that she scarcely changed her countenance at their sad discourse, and that she received newes capable to daunt the most hardy spirits with such an assurance as shamed her enemies, and confirmed them to their confusion, in the opinion they themselves had of her vertue. Nothing of passion appeared either in her countenance or discourse, she never spake better sence or with more temper, and there proceeded out of her mouth neither complaint nor word which might make any one judge that she

went

went to dy unwillingly; nay they who ſometimes ſaw her paſſionate againſt *Herods* inhumanity, when ſhe was provoked by the death of her neere kindred, found her much more moderate as to her own; and obſerved no new reſentment in her for this laſt effect of his cruelty.

She onely ſaid to thoſe who were preſent at her laſt actions; *Tell* Herod, *that it is this day that I begin to receive a good office from him, and that I accept the preſent, which he hath pleaſed to ſend me, with more joy and acknowledgement, than ever I did all the teſtimonies of his love. I can never-the-leſſe proteſt before the God which we adore (and I owe this juſtification to my memory and the bloud from which I am deſcended) that the repugnance which his cruelties have cauſed in me either to his manners or perſon, never inclined me to the leaſt thought of offending againſt my own honour or the duty of a Wife: Tell him that the bloud of* Joſeph *and* Sohemus, *which he hath ſhed, will cry for vengeance againſt him; and that if I be culpable at my death, it is becauſe that by my imprudence I have cauſed the ruine of thoſe innocent perſons: As for* Firidates, *I thank God, I feele no remorſe of conſcience that can accuſe me of the leaſt fault againſt my husband, and I had no other thoughts for his perſon but of acknowledgement and eſteeme as due to his vertue: Tell him that I beſeech him if I may beſeech him at my death, that he would ſtop the current of his cruelties with me, and look with more affection and pity upon the children which Heaven hath beſtowed upon us, upon whom the rage of our enemies may extend it ſelf, if he do not remedy it. After this ſupplication, I pardon him for my death with all my heart, and I pardon*

Salome too for it, though she might have contented her self to hasten the end of my dayes without blasting my reputation: and I go without regret to render an account to God of my actions whether criminall or innocent.

After these words, which drew streames of teares from them who heard them, she gave some small orders for the recompense of those persons which had served her; and having setled her mind in that respect, she kneeled down in a little Oratory which she had in her chamber, where she prayed with an action nothing relishing of the world.

After she had bestowed a quarter of an houre in this pious employment, she returned with a much more cheerefull countenance than before; and after she had given the last embrace to her inconsolable Maids, who melted into teares at her knees, turning her selfe towards them who waited to conduct her to her death: *Let us go my friends*, said she, *'tis time to part*; Hircanus *and* Aristobulus *and for me, and I must go to find out those illustrious* Asmoneans, *who through the cares which* Herod *hath taken, preserve a place in Heaven for me.*

With these words she gave her hand her self to him who was to lead her; and having again with a look full of sweetnesse and Majesty, taken her last leave of those who were about her: she went out of the chamber and passed into the Court, where the Tragicall preparation was made for her death.

Dispence with me Sir, from telling you the last particulars, it may be enough and more than enough for you to know, that upon that mortall scaffold, the most beautifull head was separated from

from the faireſt body in the world; and the moſt vertuous, the moſt innocent, and the moſt couragious of all women loſt her life, by the horrid command of a Monſter thirſty after illuſtrious bloud, whereof he ſacrificed the faire remaines to the rage of its enemies. The Sun being at the latter end of his courſe gave light unwillingly, as I believe, to this ſad adventure, and the univerſall nature would have put on mourning, if it had been capable of ſence, for the greateſt loſſe it could ever ſuffer.

Theſe laſt words of *Arſanes* were interrupted with ſighs and ſobs; and not being able to go farther to finiſh what he had to relate concerning the remorſe of *Herod*, and ſome accidents which followed *Mariamne's* death, he caſt his eyes upon *Tiridates*, to ſee what effect the concluſion of this pitifull narration had wrought upon him. He was amazed, and *Marcellus* too, that there proceeded not one word from his mouth nor ſigh from his breaſt; but their amazement ceaſed, when after they had looked nearer upon him, they ſaw that he was fallen into a ſecond ſwoone much deeper than the former.

*Marcellus* being touched to the quick with grief, both by the pitifull relation of *Mariamne's* death; whoſe eminent vertue and admirable beauty he had heard a thouſand times highly extolled; and at the condition wherein he ſaw the unfortunate *Tiridates*, was hardly capable of giving him either ſuccour or conſolation: and whileſt *Arſanes* with the reſt of *Tiridates* his ſervants, that were left in the houſe, took care by all poſſible remedies to ſe ch

the

the Prince out of his swoone, he sate by him with his armes a crosse, and lifting up his eyes to Heaven, as it were to accuse fortune for the mishaps to which she exposes vertuous persons, he made sad reflections upon the misery of men.

*Tiridates* came not to himselfe again a long time, and the greatest part of the night was past before he recovered his sences. *Marcellus* seeing himself very far from the repose and comfort that was promised him, did not so much as seek for any in that desolate house; and out of the excellency of his nature did so far interesse himself in *Tiridates* his misfortune, that for a while he lost the memory of his own.

At last after a great deale of paines taken with him, *Tiridates* opened his eyes, which he turned every way, in such a manner as caused those that stood about him to judge sadly of it. *Marcellus* called him by his name divers times, and seeing that he did not answer him but with dying lookes: "Tiridates, *said he to him*, will you not call to mind "that you are a man? and more than that, that "you are a man of courage? Afflictions may touch "you, but they should not make you lose either "your knowledge or your reason.

*Tiridates* made no reply to these words of *Marcellus*; but onely after he had tumbled a few turnes upon the bed, like a person full of agony, opening his mouth to give passage to a voice interrupted with sobs: "O Mariamne! *said he*, you are dead; "and more than that 'tis *Tiridates* who hath hastened your death! this was it that remained to "conclude his deplorable destiny with an end con-

"formable

" formable to the beginnings of his calamities; and " it was not aggravation enough to the last misfor- " tunes of *Tiridates*, that *Mariamne* should dy, but " that *Mariamne* must dy for *Tiridates* his fault. I " have brought you to your grave, O Queen, whom " I have so religiously adored, and I have not a life " precious enough to sacrifice to your memory in " exchange for yours.

He stopt at these words, and recollected himself to receive the favourable death which he desired, and whereof he already felt the approches, whilest *Marcellus* endeavoured to divert his grief. *Tiridates* had no more eares for his discourse, nor eyes for the objects which presented themselves before him, nor thoughts for things of this world. Never possibly did Love produce a more excellent & more marvellous effect, than it wrought in this Prince; and by the meanes of his love alone his grief served him in stead of sword, poyson, precipices; and without requiring any externall help, death which was desired by him, and is to be wished for by unfortunate men like him, offered it self to his assistance, and presented it selfe to him at a time when he received it with a joy which in all appearance could have no residence in his soul.

He perceived the approch of it, and took notice of it, and giving it entertainment worthy of the good office it did him: " O death, *said he, with a* " *lower and more feeble voice than ordinary*, O death, " how willingly do I receive thee, and though I " ought possibly to refuse thy help at a time when " some remainder of life is necessary to me to teare " out the soul of *Mariamne*'s executioner with

" mine

" mine owne hands, yet how deare is thy ſuccour,
" and thy coming favourable to me! *O Mariam-*
" *ne, continued he a little after,* receive this Soul
" which I render you as the onely reparation I can
" make you for having contributed to your death;
" It takes its flight towards you unworthy as it is
" to preſent it ſelfe before you, and in what condi-
" tion ſoever you be, the purity of yours will never
" be offended by the laſt gift I make you of it.

Theſe were the laſt words he ſpake, and a little after, grieſe giving its laſt aſſaults ſeized upon his heart in ſuch a manner, that that part which lives firſt and dyes laſt was not capable of ſuſtaining the functions neceſſary for the conſervation of life. He onely looked a farewell to *Marcellus* and *Arſanes*, and a little after his eyes were covered with darkneſſe, his ſpeech failed him, and all his ſtrength having totally forſaken him, he remained cold and pale between *Arſanes* his armes; not in a ſwoon like thoſe whereinto he had formerly fallen, but really dead; a death which being neither violent, nor naturall, but participating of both, did punctually accompliſh *Thraſillus* his prediction; a death which freed him for ever from the more tedious and cruell deaths which he had inceſſantly found in the memory of *Mariamne*. Happy man in his deſtiny, that he did not ſurvive the perſon for whom he had onely lived; and glorious in his end, for having given in his death ſo brave an example of the moſt pure and reall paſſion that ever any ſoule was inflamed withall.

*FINIS.*